

Sage

And the Healing Angels of Light



Image: Gabriella Szabo: <http://www.gabriellafaeries.com>

If you can't truly express yourself, then you don't exist.

James Moncrief

Divine Love Spirituality: <http://divinelovesp.weebly.com/my-free-books-and-free-padgett-messages.html>

© February 2017

Preface

Marion and James want to live true to themselves through their feelings. Marion came to understand this through her life and spiritual investigations, and James came to understand this from Marion. She leads the way in expressing their bad feelings, it all coming quite naturally to her; James struggles along constantly needing her help and prompting.

Marion is wholly focused on only her feelings, she doesn't want to be involved in anything that is going to distract her from this by using her mind. James is not so feeling focused being able to use his mind to draw upon knowledge and help from the unseen realms. His books are a result of all he's been told by nature spirits, spirits, angels and God, via his Indwelling Spirit of God.

Marion and James have been married and actively doing their Healing for twenty years. It is their life, and continues to evolve and unfold as the years pass. There is far more to it than what James ever thought it would involve, as is he constantly wondering when it will end; Marion doesn't have such thoughts, simply living one feeling at a time.

James wishes his Healing finished years ago; Marion says hers (and his) will finish when it finishes. Marion says, it's when you know there is nothing else left in life for you, nothing more that you want to do to keep yourself away from your true self - that's when you are ready to begin doing your Healing. That's when you'll want to start taking true responsibility for yourself - for all you feel. She says she doesn't think James is there yet, he still needs my help, he still can't do it himself. James wishes he could do it himself, but part of his feeling powerless is because he's so out of touch with his feelings, that his parents never allowed him to have them himself, always interfering with them and telling him he was feeling something else. So he's under no illusion anymore that he will probably need Marion's help right they way through to the end.

Marion has taken them ever deeper into themselves through their feelings. She is ruthlessly honest and true to them, being able to accept even the worst of what she felt as a young child, and it all has to come out for her to feel better about herself. James has followed her more like a petulant child kicking and screaming, understanding from what she's said and shown him through her Healing that she is right and he needs to do his Healing too. So he struggles on trying to express his feelings wondering if he'll ever get it, and really be able to do so effortlessly and naturally as Marion can.

So when will their Healing end? As Marion says: It will end when it ends. And as James is currently feeling - it will never end. ARGH! When are all the bad feelings going to stop? When is it going to be over? When, when, when... oh well, more bad feelings to express and long for the truth of...

Do you see her Sage?

Yes.

What do you see?

White light, out there, over the water, shining bright... it's like a star, small, but it's getting bigger...
Is she coming closer?

Yes.

Why?

She's coming to see you.

Me? Why is she coming to see me?

She will tell you.

What will she say?

She'll tell you things you are to know.

What sort of things?

Things about yourself... and your life.

Why; why do I need to know them?

They will help you in life, and help you get to know yourself... when the time is right.

When will the time be right?

I don't know. You'll know. When you're older.

She's getting brighter, the star is bigger, all shinny-bright, silvery... is she an angel?

Yes. She's a Sea Angel. A Healing Angel. She lives out over the sea. She can heal people.

Under the sea too?

Yes, I think so. You can ask her when she gets here - where she lives and what she does.

Is she coming to help me with my legs?

Possibly... I mean, I don't know. She is coming to help you, but I don't know what that help will be.

What will she want me to do?

I don't know. She might want you to go with her... would you do that, if she asked you to?

Yes.

Does it make you feel scared?

No.

Why aren't you scared?

Because she's an angel, and nothing bad can happen to you when you're with your angel - everyone knows that.

And what if she says you're to stay here; how does that make you feel?

That's okay too... I will do whatever she says, because she is from God, and God knows what's best.

So you wouldn't feel angry if you had to stay as you are, and not go with her?

No, I don't think so. I might if she says that I will never be able to go with her; but maybe she will say that if I can't go now, she will come back for me another day... when I can go with her. Would you like to go with her - if she was your angel?

Yes. I've had enough of life, I don't want to stay here anymore. But my angel is not coming for a long time yet, and I've got to look after you, I won't be leaving you alone.

But what if I go with my Healing Sea Angel, then you'll have no one else to look after, then maybe your angel will come and get you... so you'll still be able to look after me, we'll still be able to be together.

I don't know, we'll have to wait and see. It's a nice thought, but you never know, that much I've learnt from my life; you can't make plans, not these sort of plans, anyway. God might have other ideas for us both.

But I want you to come and be with me always-

Yes, and I want to always be with you, but that's not how it might be, and we have to be prepared for that.

I don't want that, that makes me feel sad, I feel like crying. I don't want to go, you'll be sad being left here without me, and I'll be sad not being able to be with you. I want you with me; how will I be able to do the things I need to do if you're not with me?

You'd be all better, so you'd not need me in that way anymore.

You mean I'll be able to walk properly?

Yes, your Healing Angel of Light will fix you, she will make you all better - heal you. That's part of what it will be like for you in your new life in the afterworld, should she take you there, and so you won't need me there to help you.

But I still want you there, even if I can walk. I love you, and I want you with me all the time...

I know, and I love you too; but it might not be my time yet, so there might be a separation, we might need to be apart for a while, there might be other things we need to do before we can be together again.

Will we be together again?

I don't know, it's possible; and it's also possible that we might not. There are so many things I don't know - more so it seems every day.

I don't want to be by myself - I hate being alone.

I know, but you won't be by yourself, there will be lots of other people - spirits - there with you, and other spirit children. There will be lots for you to do, I promise you, you'll not be lonely; and you'll be so busy with your new life, that in no time you'll have grown up, and then I'll come and see you again. Look, I sense she's almost here, can you see her face?

Yes, she's beautiful, she looks so kind; I like her, she looks like mummy... will mummy be there to meet me?

You can ask your angel, it's quite possible.

Look, she has long silver hair blowing in the wind... oh she's so beautiful... and look at that big

seahorse she is riding, with it's long pale blue wings, and all her dolphin escorts leaping about... they seem in a rush.

Yes, time is pressing, there are many things needing to be done.

Can the seahorse come onto the land?

I don't know.

*

G'day mate, nice evening, eh? It's a right lovely sunset, that's for sure, you don't see too many of them like it these days. Hello, that's a pretty dress; you like coming down to the beach of an evening, don't you, I've seen you both before... well it's understandable, it's right lovely down here, so peaceful, no one else about other than us, no wind, not a ripple, just the flat calm of the bay stretching away out there to the mainland. And not a cloud in sight, that's how I like it, nothing warning that a blow's coming, so we've got a few more peaceful days... that's what I want, only peace, I've had a hectic life, now it's peace and quite I'm after, and so I guess are you too, eh? And as I'm standing here ruining it for you, so I'll be off; good evening to both of you, see you next time.

*

He couldn't see her?

No.

Why not? She's very close now, the dolphins remind me of that excited bunch of dogs we saw the other day, all jumping on each other and rolling around as they raced up and down the beach.

Not many people can see angels - you know that.

I know, but how could he not see her!

He only sees the sun on its way to set behind the mainland, the brilliant golden light sparkling across the flat water, and that's all I see too. He doesn't have the imagination to believe in such things; and he's like me Sage, he doesn't have the Sight.

And I have the Sight - don't I?

Yes.

But you do, too, in your dreams?

Nothing as good as yours. I can't see your Sea Angel, but I know she's real and that she's coming across the water to see you.

How do you know?

She told me. She sent me a messenger angel in my dream the other night; she said that, it's time.

Time for me to go?

No, as I said, I don't know that, but time for something, time for you to find out whether you are going or staying. I've been waiting for this time, waiting for a long time; I've always known it would come... however not exactly in this way.

With my angel coming to tell me?

I knew your angel would tell you. Soon after your accident I was also given a message in a dream that this time would happen; however I wasn't told when, only that it would come, and that I had to be prepared... and that I would be prepared.

So you could help me?

Yes. Help you understand some of the things the best I can. But there's so much I don't understand, and it won't be long before you know far more than I will ever know. I'm just your first helper, so to speak, I was to look after you for a little while, before you moved on to be helped by other people who know more than I do.

Tell me Sage; now, what do you see?

She has an aquamarine studded silver tiara in her long silver hair; and a very beautiful large aquamarine pendant around her neck, with other beryls - emeralds, around it, like we were looking at in that book, but watery blue... She's so lovely, and strong; and she has sapphire-blue eyes, she's looking straight at me, she doesn't blink, she's coming for me; I know that, I can feel it, she's coming to get me and I am ready; I want to go with her, she's drawing me to her through her eyes, and yet at the same time she's coming to me... And she has large cabochon aquamarines in rings set in thick silver on all of her fingers, and bigger ones set in curving silver bracelets up her arms; and she's holding the silver braid reins... And her seahorse has large bright red-ruby eyes, and the rest of him is of the colour of that green zoisite in that book; he looks like a sea creature, and yet his blue translucent wings make him of the air - the sea air. And he is obedient to her, he will do whatever she asks; his name is Zoel, and she is Esmerelda; and the dolphins are like sea-puppies, and they are laughing and squealing in their language, cavorting and having such fun riding the crest of Zoel's wave. He's very big, as big as a house, and she is small compared to

him, but also big - it's hard to explain; and he flies like those Cape Barren geese we were watching the other day, long luxurious beats of his wings; the tips touch the water sending up little spurts of silver... And they are coming on, coming to me, like a huge sea-train coming across the bay. Oh, and look; look at all the birds, the terns, large gannets and seagulls, look how they are now all following them flying along above them, just how they look when they are watching the schooling fish as you showed me the other day. And there is noise; and yet no noise, a great thunder; and yet all is quite; I don't understand it, it's as if the whole world would hear of their arrival, and yet no one hears anything - do you hear them?

No, nothing, all is silent to me; and I don't see anything other than the calm blue water.

They are very close now, more dolphins are joining in on the fun, there's about twenty of them, looking like the ones we saw from the boat when we went out to Seal Rocks. And she is lifting up one hand, and in it is a silver sceptre with another very large perfectly clear aquamarine; you know, like the one of mummy's you gave me; but much bigger, and very clear, not like all the other ones she's wearing that are like captured-sea; and it has light shining forth from it, it's like a Star of Light, and it's white and blue, sea-blue, aquamarine-blue; and now she's pointing it at me, and she is chanting, a word? No, singing, she's singing... she's singing my song, the Song of my Soul; and she's making me feel good, I feel very good, happy, very excited, I am so happy, I feel the best I've ever felt! And the star light is going into me, deep into my soul, I can't feel it; and she is singing, and the sound is the most beautiful I've ever heard and yet strangely it's so familiar, it reminds me of a tune you used to hum to me when I was having difficulty going to sleep. And they are still coming, much closer now, not far away, all coming on, rushing, rushing, she is a whirlwind of rushing, she is light, she is loveliness in angelic form. I love her, and she loves me. I love my healing angel, Esmerelda - ESMERELDA I LOVE YOU!

*

Hello Sage, shall we walk? Take my hand-

It's hot! And I can't walk...

Yes you can, I have healed you, you can walk - try...

I CAN WALK! I CAN WALK! LOOK DOUG, LOOK! I CAN RUN AND JUMP! IT'S A MIRACLE! I CAN STAND, I CAN WALK, I CAN HOP ON ONE LEG! ESMERELDA HEALED ME - YOU HEALED ME; MY LEGS AREN'T CRIPPLED ANYMORE, LOOK DOUG - LOOK! LOOK WHAT'S HAPPENED TO ME; HOW DID YOU DO IT, HOW ESMERELDA, HOW DID YOU MAKE MY LEGS GOOD AGAIN? THANK YOU, THANK YOU SO MUCH, THANK YOU, THANK YOU MY DREAM ANGEL - YOU'VE MADE MY DREAM COME TRUE: TO WALK AGAIN... I CAN WALK DOUG, I CAN FEEL MY LEGS, I CAN USE THEM - LOOK!

Good; now let us walk along the beach on this loveliest of evenings. And please Douglas, come too, I will, for today, adjust your inner hearing, for you are to hear all I say to Sage.

*

How did you do it Esmerelda?

I talked with your soul, you did it yourself, I only facilitated the exchange. You were ready, it was time, which is why I have come.

What am I ready for?

I will tell you. Sage, now that biologically you are a woman, certain 'abilities' have been bestowed upon you, these you are vaguely aware of and are allowing to grow and evolve as you change. There are things you are going to do in life, Sage; God wants you to do them, and I have come today to help you begin.

So you're not taking me away with you - I'm not going to die?

No, not now. As I said, you have things God wants you to do before you come away with me.

Me; why me, why does God want me to do them... and what things does God want me to do?

God wants you to help other people, with your abilities, it's what God has created you to do. It's the life God has made for you. God wants you to be like an angel on earth, something people can see and look to for help, someone who will help make them feel better.

As you know, times have been hard, people have suffered, people are suffering, and people are giving up, they are no longer wanting to live as they are, they are looking for answers; not everyone, but some, those people who don't feel right, people who feel they are not happy. So they want a little hope, somehow to know they are not alone, that God has not given up on them, that all is not lost, that there is light at the end of the tunnel. And you are to help give them that light - help these people to see it.

I am?

Yes. It is written in your soul, it's who and what you are; and although you don't understand now, within a few months you will. You are a young woman, and a woman needs to show the way, and so I have come today to help you begin.

You healed me Esmerelda, you healed my paralysed legs... but how... how did you do that? I can't believe it... look Doug, I am walking, walking, they said I would never walk again, and yet I feel

like I've never not walked. You've carried me everywhere Doug, carried and pushed me, and now I can walk, it's awesome Esmerelda, what have you done... how did you do it? I can't stop crying, it's too much of a shock, I don't know what to say to you... thank you... thank you so much... thank you my healing angel.

It's my pleasure Sage, you needed to be healed to know for yourself that such things can be done. I have made your legs good again in conjunction with your soul; it's what I do, for I am one of the Healing Angels.

A Healing Angel? I thought you were a Sea Angel coming in from the sea?

I am both. I have come to you from the sea, from the depths of the ocean, and to you I've brought my Light, the Light of my Heart; and with it I have healed your legs, and other things besides. You are now well my dear Sage, there is nothing wrong with you, and nor shall there be to the end of your days.

So really, I'm not going with you? You've not come to take me into Heaven?

No. Not yet, however one day I will return for you, for I am also your Angel of Death. I am one of them, you have two angels, yet it was for me to come to you today, he has stayed away; yet he, with me, are always with you.

Why did only you come, and where is he - is he a 'he' angel?

Yes, we angels are he's and she's so you can relate to us, it is how we present ourselves to you so you can communicate with us. It was important for only myself to come to you today because it's women's business that I am to convey to you. It will be with the Feminine Aspect of Light that you will heal Sage, this you will come to understand. Do you understand what I'm saying Douglas?

I do Esmerelda.

That I will heal?

Yes. Sage, you are a Healer. You will heal people with The Light. We - he and I - will provide the Healing Light. One or both of us will be with you at all times, so you have nothing to worry about-

Oh, here comes that man...

G'day again to you both, having a bit of a walk are you, it's such a beautiful evening; like I said, they don't make too many of them like this these days... HANG ON A SECOND... you're...

you're... WALKING! I've not seen you walk, you're crippled, you was always carrying her... but... how can it be... WALKING - WALKING? It'll be the light, I've had too much of it today, I'm beginning to see things, it's such a lovely evening; yes, that must be it, I don't know what to think... walking young lady, you're walking... it's too much... the light, the light it playing tricks on me, it does that sometimes you know... too much, too much light...

Goodbye!

He can't understand Sage, and how could he, it's too much light, as he said, and so it will be the same for many people. They won't understand because their minds won't allow them to, yet they will see and slowly they will change, and that is the effect you are to have on people. People need help to change, things can't go on as they are. They have been this way for so long, and for certain reasons, but now it's time for things to change. And you Sage, are part of that change. You will play your small part in the whole, nevertheless it will be still too much for a lot of people; but that can't be helped, and in many ways such a shock is good, it is what they will need to stir them up, to get them thinking, questioning, wondering, and wanting to know why.

I want to know why, too, Esmerelda? Why Sage?

Because Douglas, Sage is part of a Sisterhood of Healers. They've had to lay low for many years on earth, but now their time is coming again and they are able to resume their work, and Sage is the first part of that. And we angels are to assist with that work. It is within her soul, it's what she is destined to do. Everyone is destined to do whatever it is they do, it's encoded in your souls; and in Sage's soul, is to help people through the Light of Healing - using the Healer's Light. And he and I are to provide that Light. Sage doesn't have it herself, but she will be the conduit for it. There is nothing brighter, nothing truer, nothing purer than Angelic Light; it is untampered with, so healing using it is the purest form of healing there is.

So is it a blessing from God?

Yes, and no. It just is; it is what Sage is, and we are going to help her express these abilities, or natural attributes, of her soul. Everyone has talents, even if the person or spirit doesn't know what they are; yet in time, when they are true and pure, everyone will be expressing them, and this form of healing is one of Sage's talents. And now that she is a woman, it's time for this talent to begin its expression.

And it's not a blessing from God - what did you mean by "no"?

It comes with its difficulties. Imagine Douglas you are suddenly given the Gift of Healing, and miraculous healing at that. How do you think the world would react to you?

Everyone would want to be healed.

Exactly, everyone; and how would one young woman cope with the demands of everyone wanting their pain and suffering to be taken away?

I see what you mean. It's too much to think about. Is it right? I mean, to subject Sage to something like that?

It's not a matter of her being subjected to anything, nor whether it's right or not, it's just how it is. And there are ways of making it be all right, which is why you are still needed Douglas - she will still need your help.

I can see that Esmerelda, but of what help can I give, what shall I do? My mind is reeling with what you've said, let alone with what you have done! Sage is walking - WALKING! I can't even accept that, and yet here we are the three of us walking casually along the beach as if it's no big deal, and I can't even see you! You have performed a MIRACLE on her. Look at her perfectly functioning legs, legs that for so long I've looked at and despaired over the hopelessness of them. I've felt so sorry for her, to go through her whole life crippled by that awful accident, and for her having always to rely on the likes of me and other people... and what if something were to happen to me... it was too much, I didn't want to think about it... but now, the relief, the sheer relief, the burden, the weight of worry has been lifted, gone, in a flash; but now instantly to be replaced with another and perhaps even bigger worry... I don't understand Esmerelda, is she, dear Sage, to... heal the world?

No, nothing as dramatic as that. No, Sage is to do her small part, that is all. It will be all what she can deal with, nothing more; nothing more will be or is expected of her, and it will naturally take its course. You will see, you have nothing to worry about Douglas; however it is good that you allow yourself to feel those bad feelings, stay with them, they will help keep you true, and in and through them you will know what to do. Your mind is running wild with imaginings, it is the Light, Douglas, and it will require some adjustments in you, give yourself time, don't be hard on yourself, everything will work out all right, you will see.

I hope so Esmerelda... anyway, there's nothing I can do... and what am I saying, this so-called healing ability aside, I should be so happy for you Sage, that you are FREE, that you can WALK, that you'll be able to look after yourself... I still can't comprehend it, what's happening here, Sage, and your legs, and I'm talking with an ANGEL... I don't-

It's all right Doug, I understand. Esmerelda is saying that I have work to be done, that God wants me to do something special and has given me the ability to do it. How will I do it Esmerelda?

You'll see. It will all naturally happen, as I said. And I will be with you, or close on hand, and you can always ask me.

Now there are a few more things I am to tell you, then I will go, and you can both go and have some dinner - fish and chips by the pier, I would suggest.

Sage, as I said, you are part of an unknown Sisterhood, it's very ancient and there has always been women involved in it from all races and walks of life, however because of the problems that have befallen humanity, the abilities of such women have mostly lain dormant with very few people or women spirits ever expressing such deeper feelings within them.

When you see, Sage, a dog that is hurt and crying, what do you feel you want to do for her?

I want to hold her, put my arms around her and make all the pain go away.

Yes; and when you see a little child crying because its mother has been mean to it, what then do you feel?

The same feelings.

And when you've seen a person like yourself, someone confined to a wheelchair - then what have you felt?

Very sorry for them. It makes me want to cry. I want to run over to them and hug them all better, to tell them it's okay, even if I can see they are not feeling bad.

So you would like to make them all better?

Yes.

Then that is what you will do.

Really!?

If you want to, yes. The Power is within you, it's stirring within your soul. And when you feel moved by your feelings they will be too strong and you will act, and what will result, you will see. And he and I will be right with you. We can see those stirrings in your soul, we can see the light of your feelings, we know what you will want to do, and we will ACT. And it will be through our actions, which first come from your feelings and deep desire to help and love and console and make right - to ease and end all pain and suffering, that we will be able to Mobilise the Light. And what that means is, the legion of angelic helpers we have working with us, will be able to do what your soul is asking and making you feel you want to do. And they will carry out the actual healing. That is how it works, yet mostly you will not be aware of what's going on behind the scenes; and you don't need to know, you are only to keep focused on your feelings, for your feelings are the key, they are: The Way. We angels will act upon your feelings, and when your feelings are true, then we can truly do what needs to be done. And all this means, is, you don't need to think about any of it, just do what you want to do, as your feelings are true, and we will

support you. And as you grow older and with more experience, you will come to understand that which will be required of you, but now it is enough. I will leave you. I am not to remain here on this earth plane talking with you as I have done. I will be in the Plane of Angels, and with your Sight, Sage, you will be able to see us, as will a few other people, but not the majority of people, like that man who just spoke to you. He couldn't see me for he doesn't have the eyes to see, but you do Sage.

Come Joel, it is time we are away. I will return soon Sage. Douglas, you too, simply do as a you feel. It will be an exercise in letting go of control for you, it might be hard at times, however I assure you, nothing bad will happen to you both - do you understand me?

Yes Esmerelda. With my feelings I understand, and I know it's true; but please, can you tell that to my mind, it's still reeling!

In due course it will settle down Douglas. Goodbye to you Douglas, for now; and goodbye to you my Dear One, Sage. I will be away... into the Light, Zoel, let us... BE AWAY!

She's going Doug; fast, going as she came... she's awesome... what a beautiful sight. I wish you could see them all. I want to go with her! Don't leave me Esmerelda, I want to go with you...

It's probably good for me not to see them... that would be even more my poor mind would have to struggle with.

Come on Doug, she's gone now, just bright light far out there... let's go and get those fish and chips, I've starving!

You know Sage, if you keep trying to feed the fish, you won't have any chips left for yourself.

I know, we'll have to buy more. It's those cheeky seagulls, they keep gobbling them all up before the bits sink low enough in the water for the fish. Wave your legs about Doug and keep the seagulls away, mine aren't long enough. If mine were as long as yours, then I too would be able to dangle them in the water, and then I could put a chip between my toes and put it under the water where those little fish would get some. I need to grow older Doug, then my legs will grow longer.

Your legs are fine as they are. I mean, look at them Sage, such beautiful long skinny legs as they are, and PERFECT! Look at you waving them about, what an incredible experience you've had Sage - we've both had; for us to be here like this as if we've done it many times before, without your chair or my carrying and holding you, and now here we are. Oh it's too much, I need to lie down and wake up when the dream is over. How do your legs feel Sage?

Like legs.

Yeah, fair enough. I mean, are they what... oh I don't know, I don't even know what I want to say-

Touch them, they are just like legs, normal legs...

Yes, I guess they are... it was as if I was expecting them to be something unreal, oh I don't know, sort of like fake legs somehow... and how did it happen? ARGH! It's too much, my poor old mind, it can't cope. How can you have crippled legs one moment, and then next, after some woman whom I can't even see, appears on a huge seahorse coming in from the sea, and touches your hand? I didn't see a thing! And then next thing I know, you're up and WALKING! Did you feel anything happen when she touched you?

Yes, a sort of tingling, and her hand was hot, almost too hot, but she had such a strong grip I couldn't have let go; and then suddenly I felt good, like really good, like the best I've ever felt; and then I was up and walking, and that felt good too; and it was like I'd walked all my life, when for as long as I can remember I've not walked.

Yeah, so how about that! You were four when the accident happened, and your legs were smashed beyond repair. The doctors fixed them up, but you were crippled, and they said with such damage, nothing could ever be done about them. They said, as I've told you, that even if they amputated them, still you'd not be able to use false ones, I can't remember the medical term they said, but they were a lost cause. And now look at you! HA! I'd love those doctors to walk onto the pier now, god, what would they think, they'd die of amazement... I think I'm about to die of it too!

YES! That little fish got a piece, and YES, that one two... see Doug, they are getting smarter now, they are catching on... I love those little fish. I wish I could go swimming with them, you know, just be a fish and see what it would be like being able to swim underwater; and to breathe underwater, to be in the water but not all wet and cold, to feel nice and warm and comfortable like they must do-

HELP! HELP! HELP ME SOMEONE! MY CHILD-

Sage... don't... you don't know how to swim!

OH MY GOD, LOOK! LOOK, SHE'S SWIMMING AFTER HIM, SHE'S SO QUICK... IT'S ALL RIGHT EVERYONE, SHE'S GOT HIM... LOOK! SHE'S HOLDING HIS HEAD UP AND SHE'S SWIMMING BACK AGAINST THE TIDE... HERE LOVE, OVER HERE, WE'LL HELP YOU UP.

OH THANK YOU, THANK YOU SO MUCH, I don't know what happened, I just turned my back for a moment, and he jumped in! Oh I can't thank you enough young lady, thank you, you saved my boy, he would have drowned, he can't swim; thank you, thank you so much... and you're not even wet?

Sage, are you all right?

Yes Doug, I'm fine. He's such a cute little boy, what's his name?

Charlie, and he's always doing things like that, as soon as I take my eyes off him, he's into some mischief; but over the side of the pier - you'd thought you'd like to swim with the fish, did you Charlie my lad... and thank you miss, thank you ever so much; you are so brave, so courageous, not even a thought for your own safety, straight in before I knew what to do... yet how is it that you're not wet? I don't understand... it's a miracle, I say - EVERYONE, IT'S A MIRACLE! SHE SAVED MY LITTLE BOY, AND LOOK AT HER, SHE'S NOT EVEN WET, NOT A DRIP! HOW IS IT? I DON'T UNDERSTAND... but thank you, thank you miss, thank you ever so much.

Oh that's all right - he'll be all right now.

Yes, he will, thank you, I won't tell his father about it - it will be out little secret? Oh what can I do to thank you, I am overwhelmed - you saved my Charlie!

It's nothing; I'm glad I could help, goodbye Charlie...

And your name, my dear, what is your name - I must know your name!

Sage.

Thank you Sage, and goodbye, and thank you again; oh thank you a million thank yous... did you all see that, she saved my Charlie, and not a drop on her! How is that, her hair is dry, as are her clothes, and yet into the sea she dived, fearless, before you even knew, in she went, just like that, and such a young girl... come on Charlie, enough swimming for you today, I'll have to get you into dry clothes.

Are you sure you're all right Sage?

Yes Doug, I feel really good. But I don't want to stay here anymore, let's go home.

Oh God, so is this how it's going to be - I'll have a flaming heart attack! I didn't know what happened; someone calling out for help, and next thing you're being helped out of the water... Did you see him fall in?

Yes, she was talking to that man, she wasn't watching her child at all, and I was feeling sorry for him, and then next thing, he's over the edge. I don't remember any of it, just being helped out of the water by those men's strong arms lifting me up; and his mother, so worried she'd not been paying attention - that was quite a shock for her.

Shock! Shit it was a shock for everyone on the pier, we were all struck dumb, all except you Sage. You were like one of those little fish, you just dived in, the tide was carrying him away, but it all seemed effortless for you, and you could SWIM! How did you know how to swim, you've never swam before, let alone against such a strong current, you've always just sat in the water; I've tried to move you about, but it was always so difficult, you couldn't even float without my help or those buoyancy belts you hated.

Yes, funny about that - wasn't it? I didn't even think, it just felt right, and I felt so good, like I was one of the fish. And it was strange, because it was as if there was this power helping me, I can't explain it, but it moved me; I don't know how to swim, I've never learnt, yet it was easy. And holding Charlie's head above the water, that was easy too; and it wasn't me, Doug, I didn't do it, it was the angels.

Yes, yes, I guess it was, oh god, what next, we've hardly had a moment to adjust to the fact that you can walk; and now, not only can you walk, but you can also SWIM! Shit, you'll be flying next, don't for God's sake say you wish you were like a bird flitting through the air... Oh fuck, it's too much, I can't stop laughing, you *were* a fish, and dry; that woman was right, not a drop on you, who'd have known you've just been in the sea rescuing some woman's baby! I mean, seriously Sage, this is all too much, how am I going to be able to cope - I CAN'T COPE... and Healing Powers, Christ! - what are those... Oh my God, what is going to happen, this isn't the life I thought I was in for; no, but don't get me wrong, Sage, IT'S BLOODY WONDERFUL - YOU

CAN WALK! And you can SWIM! Ha!

I'm glad you're happy Doug-

Happy Sage? Old Dougie is ECSTATIC WITH THE WONDER OF IT ALL. Angels talking to you on the beach; you can walk when you were a cripple for life; saving little boys when you can't swim and not a drop of water on you - god, I should write a book! This is going to be one amazing life with you, dear girl, and it's only day one! What's going to happen tomorrow! I can't take you out Sage, you'll have to stay home so I can cope, it's all too much for uncle Doug - I didn't know that I signed up for this!

It's all right Doug, we'll take it one step at a time; and nothing bad happened, and nothing bad will - it was all good.

One *step* at a time, ha, ha - good one Sage. I know, that's what I'm afraid of Sage, all the good, and possibly too much good, but it's nothing for you to worry about; shit, really I am so happy, so happy for you Sage. And you seem so relaxed about it. You're the bloody hero. I was standing around like some dick on the pier not knowing what to do, and before I'd gathered myself, you've got him, and are back, and being lifted up out of the water. It was all so quick, I think I even imagined it all; yes, that must have been it! And look at you, sitting there cool as a cucumber, and I'm the one freaking out! You'd have thought it was me who can suddenly walk and swim, and who goes around rescuing unwanted neglected children from certain death; that bloody mother, shit I can't stand mothers like her, she was more concerned with putting on her show for all those men, than she was looking after her child. I saw her too, Sage, yet I wasn't watching when he jumped in; but oh god, it's no good - what you can do? Maybe the shock will make her wake up to the fact that she was neglecting her child; but somehow I doubt it, it's going to take more than that.

I don't know about that-

No? And why should you, however it's none of our business. I love you Sage, I love you like you are my own daughter, and when your parents died, I didn't know what to do. Could I deal with you, a four-year-old? I wasn't ready for that; I'd not wanted children, but as you had no one else, and the thought of you going into a home, and as I was allowed to care for you, then you became as if you were mine, so I don't want anything bad to happen to you.

Esmerelda said nothing bad would happen - remember.

I know, but I'm not as trusting as you Sage. Perhaps you are naive or just true in your faith and truth, being still so young. I don't know, but I'm a cynical older man who's seen a lot; and to think that little boy might be food for the sharks had you not rescued him, and all because she was waving those big tits of hers around trying to impress those men. Ah no Sage, I don't want

anything to happen to you, and I hope like hell Esmerelda is right... And then again, why am I worrying about it - shit, I wish I wasn't such a worrier, because you've just been given your legs back, you can walk for Christ's sake - WALK! I mean, if they can do something like that, then surely they can do anything; so yes, at least they can keep you safe... because I won't be able to. Oh Sage, I've dreaded something terrible happening to you all the way along. It was bad enough you getting smashed up and losing your parents and little brother, yet I feel so powerless half the time, having to go to work and leaving you with so many other people, and just not knowing what's best for you: how can I know how to be a good father, I don't anything about parenting. And I've always worried that I'm doing further damage to you, and that I was interfering or influencing you in ways that would cause you problems. That mother on the pier, she doesn't know what she's doing to her little boy. She says she loves him, and maybe she does, I don't know - and I don't want to know; but that's not loving letting him go like that, unattended. And all her carry-on that she only took her eyes off him for a moment, her eyes were hardly on him; and at such a dangerous place like that, with no protective railing, anyone can go over the side, god with the tide swishing underneath it so fast, I can't walk too near the edge for fear that I'll get giddy and go over the side myself. And she was playing up to those men, she hardly gave her child the time of day - and then over he goes; really the truth is, as horrible as it might sound, but she doesn't want her child, she'd probably have preferred it, if she could be honest with herself, that he did get swept off, never to be seen again. I know it's a horrible thing to say and think about people, but I can't help it, it's what my life has led me to see... and now, now what am I to believe with you saving the little boy... I mean, maybe the little boy would have been better off to have drowned, to go into spirit and there be raised possibly by spirit parents who would look after him properly, and at least in spirit they'd be no fear of drowning by falling off some pier.

Yet it's not my place to say such things; however I can't help saying them-

You're not to stop saying them Doug, Esmerelda says it's very important that you keep saying all you feel, and particularly all your bad feelings.

She does, how do you know... Oh of course, you're talking to her, aren't you - can you see her?

No, not at the moment, but she's in my mind, and she's telling me that it's something very important for you to do Doug: for you to keep expressing all your worries and bad feelings, and to not hold any of it back. She says that it will help you, it's your way of looking after yourself, of healing yourself, in a way; I don't understand it, but that's what she's saying.

Okay, so you don't mind me ranting and raving, and going on about such things?

No, not at all, it's interesting listening to you.

All right then, and I can't bloody well stop anyway, something's happened to me, today has unhinged me, I've just become a blubbering wreck - god, I don't think I've said so much before at one go in all my life!

It's the Light Doug, that's what Esmerelda is saying, the new light that's coming from my soul is affecting your soul, and so you are feeling all these things.

Yes, well it feels like it's pushing all of this up out of me, I can't keep it down; and you know how I've been, not really one to share my feelings, not wanting to influence you with them... but now, you're suddenly all grown up, it's as if you're the wise one Sage, you're the sage, Sage, and I'm younger than you; oh I feel all over the place, and I hate feeling so at sea - god, now I feel like it's me who's fallen over the edge of the pier, it's me who's being carried off into the deep blue sea, not that little boy.

And when you tell me about all your feelings Doug, she says it's important for you to want to know the truth of why you're feeling them. Yes, that it's, that's what she wants me to tell you; it's very important, it's as if through the feelings somehow - yet only if you want to know - the truth of why you're feeling them will come to you.

Okay, I sort of understand. So when do I ask for the truth, and who do I ask - you, her, God?

No, you just long for the truth of your feelings; the truth your feelings are trying to show you - that's all you need to do, nothing else. She says you can also ask God to help you see the truth through your feelings, and to ask God to help you bring up and speak about all your feelings; but really it is you who has to want to do it, wanting to express all you feel and wanting to see the truth of such feelings - does that make sense? She says that's what it's all really about, the real healing, but I don't know what she means by that.

Well I can sort of understand it, it sort of makes sense, I've just not thought of it that way before. I'll think about it... but how are you, are you feeling okay, are you tired, it's been a big day and for you, and it's only all happened this evening!

I'm all right, getting a little tired now, but other than that, I'm fine. I just wonder, and I'm a little worried: what about the people at special-school and the clinic, what happens now I can walk?

Oh yes, I'd not thought that through. Well, I guess you can't go there anymore, I'll have to see about getting you into a normal school... do you want to go to a normal school?

Yes, I've always wanted to-

Hmm, and I guess you do have to go to school... yes, yes, of course you do; god, I don't know, it just seems like all those normal daily things don't matter anymore. School, what's the point of that when you have just been told by an angel, and a Healing Angel of Light, one who's associated with some secret Sisterhood, that you are a Healer of Light. School... yet as you're still young, so why not, so we'll sort that out tomorrow. I'll have to call Cath and try and explain

what's happened... I can just imagine saying: Hello Cath, ummm, arrhhh, there's something I want to say to you about Sage... well, are you sitting down? Aahh, well, yesterday on the beach, something extraordinary happened to her... well, aahh, you see, she can now WALK! YES, YOU HEARD ME RIGHT - WALK! She no longer needs to go to special-school or to your clinic, she's completely fine and able to run and jump, and jump off piers, swimming like a flaming fish, and saving a little unloved boy from drowning... oh you know Cath, just all the normal every day run-of-the-mill miraculous stuff you hear about all the time... umm... you still there Cath, you still in one piece? Umm... so, I've enrolled her in the local for-normal-kids state school up the road. She wants to come and tell you and show you herself, so we'll be down a bit later once we've picked up her new school uniform... Oh - that all right with you Cath?

HA! I CAN'T WAIT TO SEE THE LOOK ON HER FACE. Cath is going to love what's happened to you; and knowing her, she'll probably take it in her stride too, nothing seems to phase her. Oh God, I'm the blubbering one, I'm the one who thinks it's the most incredible thing, whilst you and probably Cathy too, will just think it's nothing.

That sounds great Doug, I can't wait till tomorrow. Yes, it will be such a surprise for her, don't say anything to her - all right!

Ok, I won't. It's too hard anyhow; yes, you just walk in nonchalantly like nothing out of the ordinary has happened, and I'll wait to see the look on her face. Yes, priceless, I can't wait!

Do you want anything more to eat or drink, now we're back?

No, thank you, I'll just go to bed.

Sweet dreams, and I'll be here when you wake up; more than likely right here in this same spot on the couch having been unable to go to sleep, my mind is going to be working overtime about all this. Anyway love, I'll see you in the morning, and if you still want to go ahead with it all, we will, otherwise we'll just say you're sick and you can rest and we can talk or whatever; which really means, I will rave on more. And as for rest, I can't see I will be getting much rest in my New Life. Goodnight Sage.

Doug, are you awake?

Huh... yes, oh yes, I think so... Bed was a waste of time, but I must have dosed off... yeah, I feel all right, I must have got a bit of sleep - how are you, did you sleep well?

Yep, fine, no trouble. I had a dream that I was flying with the birds, it was such a good feeling, feeling so free, and we were sweeping this way and that across the tops of the trees of a lush green forest; and the sun was up and it was warm, and the sky, blue and clear; and the birds, which were sort of like a parrot crossed with a chook, were talking to me about what is their favourite food - some sort of fruit I think it was, something that tasted foul; and they all laughed at me when I said that, and it was so much fun with them. And I feel good, my legs still work - see... and I would like to go and see Cath, I want to show her my legs and tell her what happened, and see what she says about it all.

Yes, all right, we'll have something to eat, and then it will be time. Yes, I too want to see what she has to say about it all!

And you know Doug-

Yes Sage-

Well, I have this other feeling this morning, it's about Cath and you...

Oh yes?

Yes. I think you are both going to get married. You love her... don't you?

Yes. I do.

Does she know?

I don't know. She's so busy with her work, and she seems so committed, I've not known what to do... and I don't know, I've not had much success with relationships, and what with having to look after you all the time as you were; well, I thought that maybe she'd just think I was wanting to get close to her so as to get her to help me look after you... so I've sort of, held back.

But I mean, you really love her, don't you, like more than me, even - or in a different way, which I don't mind about.

Not as much as I love you Sage, but yes, you are right - some dream you must have had with those parrot/chook friends of yours! What else did they tell you? Yes, I do love her more than anyone I have ever loved. And I think that has worried me because I don't know what I should

do about it. I feel too shy when I'm with her, especially when I start thinking along those lines; and as I said, I don't want to put her off, so I've tried to keep it on a strictly professional basis, our just dealing with you.

Well, I want you to tell her.

Oh god - how about I think about it?

Yes, all right, that's good. Would you like some juice?

Okay Sage, what shall we do, how should we go about this? Do you want to walk in by yourself and see Cath, or should we go in together as if nothing's different - although the whole universe is different.

Together.

Okay, let's go... take a deep breath Dougie old son...

*

Hello Cath... you there - CATH?

YES, hello Doug and Sage, I'm in here with Micky; I'll be with you both in a moment.

No worries, we're all right, we don't need your help, not today at least...

Hi - You don't need- SAGE! YOU'RE STANDING! WALKING!

I am Cath; look at me, look what happened on the beach yesterday afternoon.

DOUG!!!!????

Yes Cath, I know - IT'S INCREDIBLE!!! And nothing really, the kid talks - and walks. Ho, hum... just another day...

SAGE AND DOUG, WHAT ARE YOU DOING TO ME!

Cath, Doug has something very important he wants to tell you-

WHAT COULD BE MORE IMPORTANT THAN THIS!!!!???

He's madly in love with you.

OH DOUG, YOU ARE??? Oh Doug, as I am with you!!!

YOU ARE CATH!!! Thanks kid!

Yes I am.

But you've never said anything to me.

Oh, and you expect me to say over our cup of coffee: Oh, by the way Doug, I love you, I have

fallen deeply and madly in love with you, will you marry me?

That's what I've wanted to say... and why not over a cuppa? And that's how I feel about you Cath... Ah, I've got to sit down-

Aren't you even going to give me a hug now that we've declared our undying love for each other?

And seriously, you want to marry me, Cath?

If you'll have me.

HAVE YOU! OH MY GOD CATH, IT'S TOO GOOD TO BE TRUE! Thank you Sage, now look what you've done! We're all crying; what a lovely way to start the day. Oh Cathy, I do love you, and with all my heart, and I want to be with you always - I don't want anything else.

And what about you Sage, how do you feel about it?

I love it Cath, I love that you two love each other.

I didn't think Doug would be interested in me, that he being so handsome would want a younger more attractive girl, and not someone committed to working her whole life with special-needs children.

But Cathy, you are the most attractive woman I've ever known. I love how you look, I love how you are, and I especially love your devotion to these children. And I want to help you, I want to support you; so don't think I'll want you to stop, or cut back, so as to spend more time with me. No, I don't know how, but I'm sure we can work it out, work things around what we both want to do, we're old and mature enough; although I have to wonder about myself in that department lately, and all thanks to Sage.

Where is she? Sage, where are you?

I'm going to see Micky.

Ok, he's in the gym room on the floor.

So Doug, tell me, what happened, I can't believe it, what with Sage, and you and I; I'm going to faint or die laughing - should I laugh or cry?

Do both, it's about all I've been able to do. Look Cath, I'm going to tell it to you straight, as weird and far out as it might seem - Ok?

Of course, I expect nothing else.

Very occasionally I have what you might call, a different type of dream, and they give me these sort of, otherworldly - I guess you could say, messages and feelings about things. And I had one of them the other night, and so felt yesterday was going to be a big time for Sage. I thought in fact in some way she might have been going to leave me. So were on the beach late afternoon, early evening-

Leave you - what do you mean?

Die.

Die?

Yes, move on into spirit. I've always felt she wouldn't be staying around for very long, that I was only her caretaker, so to speak, for a limited time, and now this...

So what happened, this is all fascinating?

Well, sure enough, no sooner had we sat down on the sand and I started to sense that someone was coming to see Sage. And as she can see into the spirit worlds, so-

See into the spirit worlds? She never told me she could do that.

No, well, we decided to keep it between ourselves; she didn't want to disturb people with what she could see. At first it wasn't much, but it's been increasing in strength lately; or I should say, she's been able to do it more easily.

So Sage is telling me what she is *seeing*, and in comes this silver-haired angel riding on her seahorse that has wings - I kid you not. I know, it's fantastical, it's wondrous; anyhow, that's how Sage described it all. Then next thing, she, the angel - Esmerelda, is on the sand taking Sage's hand, who feels a hot tingling sensation; and then Esmerelda is telling her to get up and we'll all go for a walk along the beach with her, as if it's the most normal thing we could do; so up gets Sage, as if it's what you'd do; and why not, when you're a cripple for life, just get up and walk! So that's about it. We had a nice walk and talk with the angel on the beach. Esmerelda very kindly adjusted my inner hearing so I could hear her talking. I couldn't see or sense much, but through Sage and what she said to us both, she came to life. And the angel told Sage how she's now been given healing powers, and something about a long lost secret Sisterhood of Healers that Sage is part of; and Sage will start doing miraculous healings with the angels helping. So that's it, not bad for your everyday afternoon walk along the beach - eh Cath?

Jesus, that's incredible... she can see into spirit... an angel, Sage walking... angels do exist then... they must... look what's happened to Sage... I've always wanted to see an angel, I've always hoped they are real... I don't know what to think - oh I wish I'd been there with you both; and if I

hadn't just now seen her walking, I'd have thought you were pulling my leg. WOW, what an incredible story! Miracles... it's a miracle that's happened to her... SHIT, have to told anyone yet?

Who like, the Newspapers? No, and we're not going to tell anyone, only you.

No, of course not, you don't want to get into all that media attention... Oh my god Doug, but you said she'll be doing healing miracles herself... Oh... Oh... I don't know what to think.

I agree, it's too much, my mind has been blown out. And there's more-

MORE!?

Yes. So after Sage's miraculous healing, Esmerelda suggested it would good for us both to get fish and chips and eat them on the pier. So there we are peacefully sitting on the edge of the pier with Sage trying to feed the little fish, when suddenly this toddler-boy jumps or falls into the water. And in a flash, Sage is up and dives like a swan - as if she's been high-diving all her life - in after him as the current is taking him away; and then next thing you know, before I've even got to my feet over the astonishment and oh-shitness of it, she's back with the boy in her arms and being lifted up out of the water by some men. And the amazing part is, other than the fact that she doesn't even know how to swim, and yet here she is swimming like a fish, that she's not even wet, not one drop on her, not on her clothes, face, body, hair, so go figure - what do you think about that?

I don't know what to think.

No, me either... and hey Cath, I'll give you a tip: don't think about it, about any of it, it's much easier not to.

Oh right, and like you're not thinking about it!

I said for *you* to not think about it, I CAN'T STOP thinking about it. I've hardly had a wink of sleep, and yet for Sage, nothing, no big deal, she's on top of it, taking it in her stride, so-what's-next sort of thing. She wakes up in the morning having had a strange dream about flying around with parrot/chicken type birds eating their revolting tasting food, and then tells me to tell you that I love you. And that's all before breakfast! And now here I am a couple of hours later, and guess what - I'M GETTING MARRIED!

Yes, AND ME TOO! Kiss me and bear hug me, my man... god, I've wanted you to do that to me for so long.

*

Sage, are you okay, how's Micky, he's not dribbling all over the place making a right mess - is he? Sage?... Micky? They're not here Doug... where could they have gone?

Laughter... this way Cath.

OH!!!! MY!!!! GOD!!!!

It's another miracle.

WHAT HAPPENED SAGE?

G'day Cathy! How about it, I can talk, I can feed myself; here, listen to this music, I can put it on now for myself, I don't need your help anymore.

Fuck me, Doug, she'll be putting me out of a job! Micky, what happened; or should I say, well hello Micky, now you can talk... oh my god, oh my god... how many times has that been said this morning... Micky, I'll have to ring your mother!

Yeah cool - won't she get a surprise!

And talk so well, but you've never talked in your life... how is that, how can you-

It's all been going on in my head. I've been talking, it's just that no one could ever hear me. I knew I was just making strange sounds and dribbling all over the place, but in my head I was talking to you all.

Oh my god, if only I'd have known.

And then what would you have done?

I guess, but... but you're so normal.

Yeah, it was just my body, but Sage sorted that for me - didn't you Sage. She put her hands on my head and lower back, and then I went to sleep; and next thing I know she's talking to me, and I am talking back, and then we thought we'd like to play some music.

Do you mind if we leave you both alone for a while? Doug and I have some things we've got to do.

No Cath and Doug, we'll be right, won't we Sage, it's good fun this talking caper - eh Sage? And it's about bloody time, I was sick of being trapped in my body like that. Thank you Sage, you're great, and I love you, look what you've done for me - you're the greatest!

It was nothing Micky.

Yeah, see, there you go Cath and Doug, it was nothing - how about this one Sage, shall we listen to this, it's one of my favourites?

*

Help Doug, hold me, I think I'm going to faint. Laugh or cry, OH MY GOD, OMG, OMG, OMG - that will become my mantra.

Sit down and I'll make us a cuppa, and we can talk about more mundane things; like, when will we tie the knot?

How about tomorrow, no time like the present! We can have a civil marriage, would that suit you Doug? I'm over making a big fuss about it, and I don't even know if I'm over marriage altogether since my first one failed, but for some reason I do like the idea of it with you Doug.

And what do you think about it being so soon, I mean, we've not even been out on a date together or anything; we don't even know if we will like being together outside here and your work... and where will we live - in who's house?

Oh, we don't need to do all that, we love each other, that's more than enough; and I'll move in with you and Sage - see simple, I've got it all worked out.

Yes, why not... yes, that would be the best... Cathy - oh shit, I'm suddenly feeling nervous and shy, I mean, the sheets, I've not put on clean sheets... and, and, and OMG!

*

Micky, your mum is here! Margaret, here, sit down, you'll need to.

Why Cath, what is it, is Micky all right, you called me and I came as soon as I could.

Nothing worry about, not only is he all right, but... well, you'll see for yourself when he gets here.

Hi mum!

MICKY-

She'll be all right Micky, she's just fainted.

Sage, now you're sure you're okay about Cath coming to live with us?

OH YES! It's wonderful, she'll be my mother. I couldn't think of anything better, and I'm so happy for the two of you.

And you're sure you don't feel rejected at all, not in the slightest, like I am rejecting you for Cath... nothing like that... not even a little bit? You don't think we should talk more about it?

I think you should Doug, but I'm fine, really I am, it's wonderful; and besides, I've always known she would.

But why didn't you say anything?

Because I didn't want to interfere, it all had to happen naturally. You were both so slow about it, god I don't know, but you older people; but finally it's happened, and I am feeling so good. And Micky loves it too, he knew, he could tell, they all know, they all could tell - you were the only two who didn't know.

Oh god, I do feel old.

Never mind Doug, Cathy will be really good for you - and for me; and we'll be really good for her. Esmerelda said she is going to help us a lot with all I am to do, and that you will need Cath to steady you and to have someone to talk all your feelings through with; for that's what Cathy wants, in a relationship I mean, someone to talk things through with. She's told me that, what she wanted in a man, what she realised she didn't have in her first marriage; so with you, particularly now you're starting to open up, she'll be able to have the sort of relationship she really wants. And that makes me feel happy, too.

Sage, do you ever get the feeling that life is not of our own making, that someone else behind the scene is really calling the shots?

God, you mean? Of course God is, They are always there, and all we can do is what They want.

They? It's always been God, or a Him, as far as I've known.

Ah yes, well, Esmerelda has been telling me that God is a He and also a She, like the Two of Them are One, but you can speak with each of Them separately. And it feels right to me; I like it, so God is both my Mother and Father, you know, my Big Mother and Big Father, in Heaven - that sort of thing.

Yeah well, why not, it does seem to make sense. All right, so God is our Heavenly Mother and Heavenly Father - is that what you mean?

Yup.

Yeah, okay, I'll try and stay in the loop. Shit Sage, you are setting a cracking pace!

And you Doug, are swearing a lot.

Yes, I am, aren't I! Does it bother you, I can't help it... what about Cath, maybe I should stop for her?

Cath! HA! She swears worse than you, you should hear her around the kids. She thinks they can't understand her, but they are laughing inside, they love her, they think she's a real hoot.

You're becoming a constant revelation Sage. Okay, I will take a deep breath and go with the flow... maybe there is something in all that 'going with the flow' stuff, after all.

Esmerelda says it's all fine as long as you understand it's really going with the flow of your feelings, as opposed to going with the flow of your mind - your thoughts. That most people try to control it, their moment, using their mind, but it's actually the feelings that it's really all about - going with each feeling as you feel it. Going with it, and focusing fully on it, not denying it, not blocking out or pushing aside the bad ones; just staying with them, and feeling them fully, no matter how bad they are making you feel. That's the really important part, to keep staying true to them; and then to express or speak with the feeling you are feeling; and to want to know the truth of why you're feeling it - remember, like I told you yesterday?

Yes, I remember, and I've been thinking about it because it makes sense when you say it. It would never have occurred to me before, but I like it, as hard as it sounds like it is to do. I don't know that I like the idea of going with all my bad feelings, shit, I don't want to feel bad-

That's right, that's what you do, push them aside; you do whatever you can to not think about them, to stop yourself from feeling them, and that's what you've got to stop, so Esmerelda says.

Hmmm, all right, I think more about it. I'll tell Cath when she gets here and see what she thinks about it all.

She's here now, I can hear her car-

I can't-

So I'm going to my room, you can have a bit of time together, and I want to listen to more music anyway.

You sure, we won't mind if you stay; and please, never feel like you have to leave us, we both want you with us all the time. And I'm sure I can speak for Cath, she understands the situation, and she wouldn't want you to feel like we're pushing you away at all.

I know, and I don't feel like you're doing that. It's all right, seriously Doug, and if I ever feel bad about it, or anything else, I promise I'll tell you.

Ok, now that sounds good... so you too will try and express all your bad feelings?

Yes, we all have to; and remembering to want to uncover the truth of them, that which they are to show us - which is why we have them.

Yeah, all right... ah yes, I can hear her now, too.

I'll come down for dinner, what are we having?

I thought I'd cook your favourite chicken, as I'm sure Cath would like that too.

Goody, I'll see you both then.

Okay Sage...

Hi Cath, how are you doing - ah, what are you feeling?

I'm doing well and I'm feeling so excited Doug. I can't tell you, I was a little apprehensive, what should I wear, you know, our first night together, a strange bed, will I sleep; and then I thought, what the hell am I talking about, it's not a sleep over, I won't wear anything and I hope I don't get a wink of sleep all night! However I'm not wanting to pressure you, it's BIG CHANGES, yes, for both of us, and I understand that, so I'll sleep on the couch if you like.

Fat chance of that.

Good, that's what I was hoping you'd say. And how are *you* feeling about my suddenly moving in on you both; do you feel I'm imposing, crowding in on your space - do you feel good about it all too, or do you feel apprehensive as well?

Yeah, a little nervous... yet very excited, thrilled, over the bloody moon with joy! I can't believe my luck, that not only do you like me a bit, but you love me, I still can't quite come to terms with that.

Me too, strange life sometimes, isn't it?

Yeah... And what about Micky's mother, how was she in the end?

Beside herself with joy, over the moon too. She called her husband Don, and their other children came, and they sat talking to Micky for the rest of the day. They didn't want to leave, as if it was too good to be true. I gave them my study and brought them lunch, they had a lot to catch up on with him. They were completely astounded, he was the life of the party, he had them all in fits of laughter; and he's taken it all so well, as if it was no big deal, you're a retarded child one moment, then next all that's over, no more dibbling all over everything and everyone, and then it's onto the next thing in life - remarkable.

And oh, by the way, that reminds me, Don, after consulting with Margaret, wants to give Sage something, you know, for healing Micky. They are so grateful, they want to give her whatever she'd like.

Oh gee, I don't know, what do you think about it?

I don't know either, I don't know what to think. I said I'd tell you and you'd speak with her, and see what she says. I don't know what else to do.

It's a hell of a lot for a young girl-

Young woman, Doug-

Sorry, yes... for a young woman to have to deal with. But I don't know, nothing would surprise me about her... no, hang on a moment, I have a bad feeling like I'm going to have to eat those words. Ok, let me start again, take a deep breath Dougie... Now, as everything about her is going to shock me and astound me to the core of my being, just like what has happened, in what - one whole day, so fuck me, I don't know what to do, best do what you said and just tell her straight and see what she says.

Yes, that sounds good. Oh Doug, I love talking this all over with you. I feel free to say whatever I like to you, and that is all I've wanted in a relationship. And really, I don't care what else happens; of course I hope we get on really well living together, and our love for one another grows and grows, but all I really want is to be able to share all I think and feel with someone else - that's what I've come to realise, and working with these kids has helped me see that. You know, some days all I've wanted to do is talk to them, and then about a year ago, I thought, well, why not, why not just talk to them as if they are normal, and I can pretend they are talking back to me as if they could hear me and we could easily communicate, so that's what I've done. And it's also increased my desire to speak on an equal level with another adult - with you Doug. I've just wanted to be able to speak freely with you. The little communication we've had I've always enjoyed, and I thought - felt - there was possibly more; and I hoped, and that someday, maybe; and well, here we are, that someday incredibly has arrived.

Oh I feel so happy, free in a way; even as if in some ways I've been set free of the children, almost... and am I a bad person for saying this... but like I've been let out of prison; and it's not

that it's bad with them, I love working and helping them all, but now with you I feel like suddenly the door of my cage has been opened and I can at least come out for a while and fly around the room.

I understand, and I don't know how you keep being so good to those kids, it's so hard and so depressing knowing most of them will stay as they are and never make any real improvement, only get older and harder to deal with... or easier, I don't know. However, whatever you feel, well, that's you, isn't it Cath, and it doesn't matter if other people feel it that way or not, it's not their place to judge anyway; you are you, and you can only be as you are - that much I understand from life.

You make me feel good Doug, it's all the sort of thing I've always wanted to hear. To have the support, and to be made to feel that I'm not crazy, that my feelings aren't that of a mad woman who doesn't get out enough, and probably needs a good fuck.

No, you're not crazy Cath, not for me; no, you just be yourself - I'll be grateful for any of it.

Well I intend to, that much I decided in the car. I can only be myself, and if you don't like that, well there's not much I can do about it, is there?

Sage has been telling me that if I don't like anything, if I feel any bad feelings, that we should talk about them, so perhaps that is what we can do?

Oh Doug, I sure do like this 'we', which you've taken on so willingly. Yes, yes, that sounds like a very good idea, that is something I would relish doing, just being able to speak my mind, all the good and bad stuff. You Mr Douglas Miles are a dream come true. And where is Sage?

She's in her room.

Should I go up and say hello?

No, I don't think so, you can help me cook, she said she'd come down for dinner... You know, it just popped into my head, it's probably really good that she has time out, she says she's listening to music; you know, to sort things out for herself - she must have stuff going on about it all. I mean, to do what she did for Micky, and then saving that little boy yesterday, and what happen to her own crippled legs; I mean, it's not just going round to your girlfriends house and mucking about, is it!

No, not the usual way of things, that's for sure! And what do you really think about it Doug, how are you coping?

I'm not coping, I'm a stress case! Yet it's funny, because with you suddenly being here with me,

most of the stress seems to have dissolved away... or possibly, it's that I feel I have a friend, that I have someone I can talk with about it, that it's not all just me trying to fathom what the hell is going on. That we can both be in it together, provided that's all right with you Cath. I wouldn't want to push or force anything on you.

It's certainly all right with me Doug, and don't worry, I'll speak up if I feel anything is not right. And I don't pretend to understand it at all, but the evidence speaks for itself; and who am I to say what is right or wrong, but I'm dying for you to tell me every detail about all that's happened. And I mean your whole life, right from the beginning, and how you and Sage met. I know you've told me bits and pieces, however I want to hear about all the feelings you felt and went through, how it's been for you both being so close, and just the two of you all these years; and all you did for her, how you've never failed her - and so much hard work. I at least get to go home at the end of the working day, but for you, that's when it all starts. So I want to know it all... and Carol is coming tomorrow to the registry office-

As is Mark, and Sage of course, so it's all set. It was lucky they could squeeze us in because of that cancelation. And how was Carol, surprised? Mark was, I've talked to him about you, but not along these intimate lines.

Yes she was; she's thrilled, so happy for me. She's always telling me that I need this or that sort of man; and she likes you, so she's very happy. And she said she'd just bought a couple of new dresses and one should be perfect for me; so she can't wait for us to get together tomorrow morning, and for me to: "fill her in".

Great. In the morning I'm going to take Sage to her new school to meet the headmistress, then we'll come home and get ready, and meet you there later on.

Ah - I can hear her coming down.

Hi Sage-

Oh Cathy, it's so good you're here, I have been looking forward to it for so long. I love it here with Doug, but for you to be here, too; and for Doug to have someone his own age to talk with; and, oh, it's all so good - everything is so good. I can't believe how it's all working out so well.

Sage, your hands are so warm, and that was such a strong hug; are you okay, you've not got a fever have you?

No, no, I'm fine, nothing like that will ever happen to me again. I just know that I'll never get sick; the angels have told me, and I know it's true.

Really?

Yes, it's true. I can feel in here, deep in my heart, it's in my soul - that's what they say.

The angels?

Yes Cath, Esmerelda mostly, she's the main one who comes and speaks to me - and other spirits.

And by "come", what do you mean?

Well, sometimes they come and visit me, like just before, they came into my room to talk with me, to tell me things I will need to know. The spirits say they are my Sisters, that I'm part of their soulgroup, so that's why they are working closely with me. And the angels, like Esmerelda, work with the spirit Sisters; or the Sisters work with the angels. The Sisters are spirits, you know, women who have been on earth but died becoming spirits in heaven. The angels are not like us, they don't come to earth like we do starting life as a baby, yet we can work with them in spirit, or sometimes on earth like I am now. Anyway, the Sisters are to help me with my life, you know, all the regular stuff, because they've all been here - on earth I mean. They know what it's like, and they all had my healing powers but were never allowed to use them; they've been allowed to use them in spirit, that is, in their spirit lives helping some of the lower spirits, helping those who aren't as advanced, to progress more. So they can help me with practical things. And then Esmerelda comes, or I can speak with her in my mind, which I can also do with my spirit Sisters; and so we can all work together helping each other, or rather them helping me, because I don't understand anything - that's what they've been telling me.

So you weren't just up there relaxing listening to music?

Yeah I was, that too. Speaking with them is very relaxing, it's not stressful, it's easy; and all they say makes sense. It's like speaking with you guys, and even easier at times, because I don't have use my mouth and actually speak the words, I can just think things to them, we do it all in our minds.

Telepathy - is that what you mean?

Yes, I guess so, I don't really know. I just talk to them in my mind like having a normal conversation, and they talk back to me. It's very easy; and as I said, getting easier and I'm getting better at it, faster, so I don't even have to think it all through, they pick up on what I'm about to say, and tell me, and I can do the same with them. It's good fun, hard to explain, but I can do it whilst I'm listening to the music; and in fact, listening to the music makes it even easier for me, it sort of occupies my mind, or some part of it, whilst I chat away with them. However the only bad part about it is, that I don't listen to the music, it sort of gets shut out, and then I suddenly realise the songs are over and I can't remember listening to them at all. But really I don't mind about that, because it's not actually about just enjoying the music; and if I say I don't want to be bothered, they don't come, so I can have peace of mind should I want it.

Fascinating, don't you think Doug?

Yes absolutely, mind-blowing; and it's all so easy, just talking with invisible people, or is that spirits, or angels, or, oh god, I can't keep up! Hey, I don't think we should tell other people about this, just keep it between ourselves - what do you both say?

Yes, I agree - Sage?

Oh I don't mind, I don't think they'd understand me, they'd probably just think I'm crazy.

Yes, well maybe you'd better keep it to yourself when you start at your new school, you're going to be odd enough starting mid-way through the year-

So what are you going to tell them Doug, you can't say she was crippled up until the other day having to attend a special-needs school, but now she's fine and is starting here.

I know, all day I've been making up stories in my mind, I've not settled on anything yet - what do you think Sage, what sort of story would you like?

Oh that's easy, one of the Sisters told me what to say. They said that owing to a family tragedy, which I don't want to talk about, and my parents getting divorced, and my moving to live with my dad-

And he's new wife he's marrying tomorrow afternoon, who only yesterday he told he loved... oh no, I guess you'd better leave that bit out for now-

We had to move, and I had to start a new school.

So why the need for the family tragedy and divorce Sage, did they tell you that; why not just say that that you'd moved from interstate or something like that?

No, they just said it would be better, keeping the other kids at bay for a time, whilst I settled in. They'd be told that I might not feel too good, being upset at times, and that they should give me some space.

All right then, if that's what you want to do, we can go with that. So what sort of family tragedy?

The Sisters said that my younger brother had recently died of cancer.

Alright, so what should I say to the headmistress - lie, or tell her we're making up the story, and for what reason? Should I just level with her?

Play it by ear Doug, she what sort of person she is.

Ok. That okay with you too, Sage?

Yup.

Alright, I'll see if I can convincingly pull it off; and I don't know why, but for the time being I feel like going along with the Sisters. Hey, me a mere mortal, what the frig would I know!

Is the chicken ready, I'm starving?

Just about, coming right up young lady; gee, what a lot you've been through, what we've all been through! I think we should drink a toast to ourselves, and may we all be happy together. I can't believe it, Cath and Sage, two of the most beautiful women I've ever known in my life - how lucky am I!

Good morning Mr. Miles; hello Sage, nice to meet you both, please come in.

Good morning Mrs Smith, we're pleased to be here.

Please, call me Ruth. Now I've got everything ready for you. One look at Sage and I can see she's going to fit in well, so you have nothing to worry about-

Doug.

Doug. Good. And how are you feeling Sage, a bit nervous about starting at a new school?

A little, but more excited, it's something I've always wanted to do.

I see... something you've always wanted to do... I think I'll let that go for now - what do you say Doug?

I'd be more than grateful to you Ruth.

Look, to be honest with you Doug and Sage, I read the forms you filled out, and I know what you said is not true, but they comply with what's needed by the school and government regulations, so that's all fine by me. And really I don't need to know anything else, nor does anyone else, so you can leave all that to me, I'll see to it that nothing bad happens to Sage. I promise you Doug, I'll take good care of her; and I promise you Sage, that you'll be able to do all you need to do here - do I make myself clear - do you both understand me?

Yes.

Yes.

Good, so now that's over; Sage, you can start here tomorrow morning, if that's okay with you, Doug said the sooner the better. And when you come tomorrow morning, we'll sit down together and get to know one another. And then I'll introduce you to your teacher Miss Price, she's lovely, and she'll understand all that you've been through, and will also keep an eye on you. But I don't think you'll have anything to worry about, we have a small amount of children coming and going all the time, it seems to be more the way of things now, and so the children themselves are more used to it. There are some very nice children in your new class, some nice girls, and boys too, so I'm sure you'll be all right. And I want you both to know that if at any time, and I really mean this, you want to talk with me, please ask. I am very open to the parents and children, with everyone knowing they can come to me if they have to, and we can sort out whatever might be the problem. So, do you have any questions you'd like to ask me Sage?

No.

Doug?

No. Earlier we were able to get all you said we needed, so I'll drop her off at-

About ten o'clock, if that is okay?

Yes, I've taken some time off work, I'm getting married later today.

Well congratulations, how nice, and that will be all the nicer for Sage.

Yes, I hope so.

Good. Well that's all, so I'll let you both go, and I'll speak with you tomorrow morning Sage. I'm looking forward to that, in fact, I've been looking forward to it for a long time. Goodbye Doug.

Goodbye Ruth, nice to meet you.

*

Well Sage, that was easy, I like Ruth, god I would never have dreamed of ever talking with my headmaster if I had any problems, but she at least seems very approachable.

I really like her. You know she's one of them?

One of who?

The Sisters.

The ones you speak to in your mind?

No, not one of *them*, but one of them on earth - a real one, the ones in my mind were telling me when we were in there. And they said she is going to help me; help me in lots of ways, and teach me things I will need to know.

Really? So is that why she said she'd been looking forward to meeting you for a long time?

Yes. She knew I was coming.

It's all very mysterious.

No it's not Doug, it's just a network, on earth and in spirit. They all work together to get the job

done - that's what they keep telling me.

And what is this "job" they are having to get done?

It's about The Truth, helping people to understand The Truth.

I don't understand Sage, what do you mean by: The Truth?

Well now is the time on earth that people can start to be told the Truth, all in different ways. It hasn't happened before, like what I was telling you about how important expressing your bad feelings and wanting their truth is; that sort of truth, that's the New Truth, so they say; Truth that has been withheld from people because we've not been ready to receive it. But now we are, and I'm part of it; part of helping people to understand - that's what I'm all about. It's not about going to school to get good grades so I can go on into some career, this is my career, my Healing, it's what I will be doing; and being at school, as well as anything I do, will all only be for me to understand it and myself more. So that's what it's really all about Doug; and Ruth, like you and Cath, are people who are going to help me, just as you've always been helping me.

I see. More mind adjustments needed; hang on sec Sage while I turn a few knobs up there. So this, too, is what your Sisters have been telling you. How often do they speak with you?

Nearly all the time. I ask them things and they tell me things, there is a lot for me to know; like what I've just told you, all so I understand what my life is to be about, because it's not going to be an ordinary life. It hasn't this far, and it won't be; so I have to understand. And it will help me so I'm not just at the mercy of it, afraid of all the weird things that are going on, afraid of why I have all the weird feelings I have about things and people, and what they are doing and why they say the things they do. I'm still young, I know that, but they are educating me, it's a different type of education to what I'll get in the classroom. And they say there are other people for me to meet at this school who will help me, Ruth being one of them.

I see. I mean I sort of see what you're saying, so I'll have to throw the rule book out... Na, I have to admit, I have no idea what you're talking about or what's going to happen Sage, but somehow and for some reason, I'm part of it.

Yes, you were chosen by God to help me, because you can, you and Cath; you'll be more my parents than my own parents could have been for me. And because you are not my real parents, so you are both more open minded, and you won't try and stop me - parent me how my parents would have, so preventing me from doing any of this, which is why they had to go when I was young. And why I've needed you to look after me. So we'd be able to get to know each other well, as if you are my father and I am your daughter, all so you'll be free enough within yourself to help me, to not try and control me; because if you do, the Sisters are going to be very upset and will have much to say about it.

Good god no, I hope I don't control you, that's what I've wrestled with all these years about you: how much should I control, when to kick back and let you do it for yourself, even if I could see it was going to hurt you, all so you could learn about life for yourself. So yes, okay, if I'm out of line, please tell me what the Sisters say. Ok you Sisters up there, if you're listening to me; please, I am open to you having your say in my life, too. Hey, suddenly there seems to be a lot of women around - lots of the feminine energy I guess.

They are very pleased you understand Doug; and yes, they will let you know quick smart if you step out of line. However, as far as they can see, you shouldn't be a problem; you've not been a problem to date, you've easily complied with all their wishes and demands; you've been a very good student, they've been able to impress their thoughts unbeknownst to you on your mind, and you've rationally considered what they've had to say.

And they are saying that to you now about me?

Yes, I'm just speaking their words; it's Ursula, she's the leader, she's the one who tells the others what we're all doing; and I like her, she's big and round and laughs a lot, she's very happy and very funny, like she is saying now: "that's right Doug, any funny business from you and she'll come and sit on you and squash the air out of your lungs until you submit."

God, I hope it doesn't come to that Ursula.

She says you're a very good man, and Cath is very lucky, as you are lucky to have her; that you are both very well suited to each other, and time will show you the truth of those words; and that it's right you are getting married, because even though you both don't actually think that much about marriage, it will provide another bond in your relationship which you will want to honour, bringing you all the more closer to each other. You both have a lot of work to do with each other, that which is just for you both, and not to do directly with Sage; however Sage, will of course, always be part of it.

Yeah, well that all sounds good to me. Thank you Ursula, I like the sound of all that.

She says you're more than welcome, and if you ever need a bit of friendly advice, you can ask her through me.

And it's just that easy for you to speak like that with her and with me, at basically the same time?

Yes. I've not done it before; however it is - no problems.

You are certainly full of surprises Sage.

And Ursula wants to ask you Doug: Why do you accept it all so easily, all this business about angels and speaking with spirits like this?

Ha, funny she should ask that, as I was thinking about that this morning... or was it late last night... no, it couldn't have been last night, I wasn't thinking about anything-

Ursula just read your thoughts Doug, and she said; no, none of them were prying, what you and Cath were doing last night is your private business, yet what they do ensure with the help of the angels, is that no other spirits pry or interfere either. They can sort of put a barrier of light as protection around you, protection from lower spirits, so they won't get in the way and muck things up, which they are prone to do. She says, you are to have no fear about anything like that, because none of the lower 'evil' spirits, as some people call them, can come anywhere near the light that surrounds us all.

Oh, okay, well I hadn't thought of that being something to be worried about, but now that you mention it... at least it's nice to know some things can be kept private. Oh god, the mind boggles, so spirits can look in on us and all we're doing all the time?

Yes, pretty much, unless they are kept away how Ursula is saying - kept out by The Light.

All right, I'll have to think more about that one Sage, I wonder what Cath will say... But back to that question of why I am so open to all of this, as that too interests me. I had a girlfriend once, years ago, and she was into some of this, and I was a bit sceptical back then, but a lot of what she said, has as the years have passed, come back to me and made sense. So I think with her help I've sort of been a little open minded to it, not enough to want to investigate such things myself... yet now they are happening in my own life - god, she would have loved talking with you Sage - at least I'm not dismissing them - eh Ursula?

She says you're a good boy.

Yeah well, thanks for that, good to know my place in the scheme of things. Now come on Sage, we can't be late for my wedding. We've still got to buy Cath a ring, but I don't know how big her finger is.

I do, I've tried on some of her rings before.

You have, terrific, shit, that's a weight off my mind. I mean, we could always have resized it, but she will think I'm a genius when I get the right size for her. But what sort of ring, the stone, and silver or gold?

Aquamarine of course, a nice big one, and in silver, not a high quality gem, just one that you love; you know, like those ones we were looking at in that shop a while ago - because then she'll love it

too.

I'd not thought of that. You're a beaut Sage! Okay, we'll try in that shop, I did see something like that last time I was there when I was looking for that pendant for you, so we'll see what they have...

*

What about this one Sage, now that's a beauty, and five hundred bucks... that's okay.

Yes, I'm sure she'll love it, and it fits too - it's her perfect size!

Oh it couldn't be better, fantastic, wow, it's stunning, gorgeous, god I hope Cath loves it, oh that's perfect, look at the depth of the bluey-green and all that's going on inside the stone; and just like that, thank you Ursula, Sisters, Esmerelda, and all you other angels; and thank you Sage, that was brilliant of you to suggest an aquamarine.

OUCH! OW! OW! OH DAM, NOW LOOK WHAT I'VE DONE, I'VE DROPPED IT ON MY TOE AND IT'S BLEEDING ALL OVER THE PLACE. OH I'M SO SORRY TO BE MESSING UP YOUR SHOP; IT SLIPPED OUT OF MY HAND AND I HOPE IT'S NOT BROKEN... AND THANKFULLY IT HASN'T BROKEN MY TOE, I CAN STILL MOVE IT; BUT OH DAM, IT'S PROBABLY GOING TO NEED STITCHES. AH LOOK AT THE MESS, IT WON'T STOP BLEEDING - I'LL PAY TO GET YOUR FLOOR CLEANED... OH DON'T YOU TOUCH IT MY DEAR, YOU DON'T WANT MY BLOOD ALL OVER YOU; AT LEAST IT SHOULDN'T HURT YOU, I'VE NOT GOT ANY OF THOSE HORRENDOUS BLOOD DISEASES... OH WET TOWELS, YES, THAT'S GOOD IDEA... OH THAT FEELS NICE, WHATEVER YOU'RE DOING, I CAN FEEL A WARMTH IN MY FOOT - WHAT *ARE* YOU DOING? YOU'RE NOT TOUCHING IT, ARE YOU? BUT IF YOU ARE, IT DOESN'T HURT, IT DOESN'T HURT ANYMORE AT ALL!

You don't have to worry about it, it's all better now; and I'll wipe the blood up, it won't stain the floor either... there you go, see, nothing to worry about...

LOOK! SHE'S RIGHT, THE BLOOD ISN'T STAINING THE FLOOR. WHAT ARE YOU - A MAGIC CLEANER? AH YES, IF YOU WOULDN'T MIND WRAPPING IT UP FOR ME AND I'LL GO STRAIGHT TO THE DOCTOR.

No, it doesn't need wrapping up, it's stopped bleeding, as there's no longer any cut...

WHAT? WHAT DO YOU MEAN, NO CUT!? LET ME LOOK... SHE'S RIGHT! IT'S NOT CUT ANYMORE, IT'S GONE, THE CUT IS GONE - GONE! WHAT HAPPENED TO IT?

I fixed it for you.

YOU FIXED IT - WHAT? HOW?... FIXED IT... OH GOOD LORD MOTHER MARY OF GOD, YOU FIXED IT, THE GIRL TOUCHED MY CUT TOE AND IT'S HEALED - HEALED! IT'S A MIRACLE, OH MOTHER OF SAINTS, THE CHILD IS A SAINT, OH IT'S TOO MUCH, HOLD ME WHILST I FAINT, THE SHOCK, I WAS HOLDING THAT CHUNK OF BEAUTIFUL LAPIS, THEN AS ALWAYS HAPPENS IN THIS WONDERFUL SHOP, ANOTHER GLORIOUS PEICE CAUGHT ME EYE, AND BEFORE I KNEW IT, I LET THE LAPIS SLIP, AND THANKFULLY MY FOOT BROKE ITS FALL, SO IT'S NOT DAMAGED, BUT THAT SHART EDGE CUT ME, AND THIS YOUNG GIRL OUT OF NOWHERE COMES AND TOUCHES MY CUT AND BLEEDING TOE, AND IT'S ALL FIXED, AND NOT ONLY THAT, BUT SHE SOMEHOW WIPES UP ALL THE BLOOD OFF THE FLOOR, AND IT'S AS IF IT NEVER EXISTED. GOOD GOD, IT'S TOO MUCH TO TAKE IN, MY OLD HEART WILL FAIL ME. AND THANK YOU MY DEAR, WHATEVER YOU HAVE DONE, YOU HAVE SAVED ME FROM A FATE WORSE THAN DEATH. I WAS TO ATTEND THE BALL TONIGHT WITH HIM, IN MY NEW ITALIAN LEATHER PUMPS, BUT MY FOOT WITH THAT CUT WOULD NEVER HAVE BEEN ABLE TO FIT INTO THEM, THE BANDAGES, THE PAIN; OH NO, I WOULD HAVE HAD TO STAY AT HOME, AND WHAT WOULD HE HAVE SAID. HE'D HAVE BEEN SO LET DOWN, I WOULDN'T WANT TO DISAPPOINT HIM. BUT YOU MY DEAR HAVE SAVED ME FROM MY OWN STUPIDITY; YOU ARE A WONDER, AND SUCH A BEAUTIFUL CHILD. PLEASE, IF YOU ARE INTERESTED IN THAT LOVELY RING I SEE YOUR FRIEND IS HOLDING, LET ME PAY FOR IT IN GRATITUDE FOR YOU SAVING ME FROM A HORRIBLE FATE, NOT TO MENTION ALL THE DISCOMFORT AND PAIN I WOULD HAVE FELT WAITING FOR IT TO HEAL.

No, no, I don't want anything for what I've done, I only wanted to stop the bleeding-

THAT'S ALL VERY NICE OF YOU MY DEAR, BUT NO, IT'S THE LEAST I CAN DO FOR YOU; YOU GAVE ME A GREAT KINDNESS, I DON'T KNOW HOW YOU DID IT, BUT I AM NOT GOING TO QUESTION THE ACTION OF THE GOOD LORD. AND YES, TO BE WITNESS TO A MIRACLE, "THE MIRACLE OF MY OWN CUT TOE" - WELL I'LL DINE OUT ON THIS STORY FOR YEARS! SO LET ME BUY THAT FOR YOU AS A TOKEN OF MY GRATITUDE, WHICH REALLY IS NOTHING COMPARED TO WHAT YOU HAVE DONE FOR ME, IT SHOULD BE MORE... AND I'LL ALSO BY THAT BEAUTIFUL PEICE OF LAPIS TOO, AS A REMINDER - OH IT'S SUCH GOOD QUALITY, AND REAL, NOT DYED, YES, THE REAL THING.

No you don't have to-

OH HUSH NOW, YES I DO HAVE TO, AND LOOK THERE, IT'S DONE. NOW YOU

TAKE THAT RING AND I WILL TAKE MY LAPIS CHUNCK AND MY MAGICALLY HEALED TOE, AND OH MY WHAT A DAY THIS HAS BEEN. AH, YOU'RE LEAVING NOW, WELL GOODBYE MY DEAR, AND THANK YOU AGAIN, THANK YOU SO MUCH, SO MUCH... I'LL JUST STAY HERE AND HAVE A BIT MORE OF A LOOK AROUND, AND HOPEFULLY NOT DROP ANYTHING ELSE ON MY FOOT!

*

Good lord Sage, she was too much. How could you say no, I mean, what to do about it; and you did heal her toe, that was amazing. I could see it, the cut just closed itself, and the blood stopped, and then it was not there as if nothing had happened, only there was the blood all around; and then that too just seemed to disappear as you wiped it up. Argh, it's beyond me - how are you feeling Sage?

Good, fine.

That's all, surely you must feel other things... what about her paying for the ring?

Oh well, as that's what she wanted to do, that's all right - isn't it?

I don't know, I guess so, and you did refuse, and she was so insistent. I mean we could have just insisted she didn't, and left; but I don't know, it just seemed right, natural somehow, she was thanking you for what you did, paying for a service, which helped her a lot from what she said... and she paid for the ring I wanted, you didn't even get anything, the ring wasn't for you, but that's what she must have thought.

It doesn't matter Doug, and I don't want any rings anymore, they are not important, and they only get in the way of my hands. And I'd rather it be for Cath, and when she wears it, I can see it too.

And Sage, Micky's parents want to give you something for what you've done for him - I forgot to mention it to you, with everything else that's been going on.

Oh I don't want anything from them. I'm not helping people to get anything from them. But I guess if they want to give me stuff... I don't know - what should I do about that Doug?

I don't know either - ask the Sisters?

Yeah, okay, I'll see what they say. But really I don't want people to feel they have to give me anything.

It's that they want to give you something because of how good you've made them feel. It's a

huge thing Sage, healing that woman's cut toe might be a little thing compared to fixing Micky like you did, and really it is out of this world. I mean, how would you know what to give someone in return for such help anyway, it can't be judged in monetary terms: Oh, they give you this amount of money or a big present because you did an incredible healing on Micky. I mean, the expense alone of what the government was paying, and what his parents were paying to have the extra help he needed, and now all that money will be saved... although they'll have other expenses with him now being normal, yet still, it is sure to be a saving. And so how can you value that, how can you put a price on it; and it's not, as you say, as if you're charging for your healing services... Oh I don't know, all these things are too complicated for my simple mind. Maybe we should just refuse; and I mean, it's not as if we're short of money... but then again, these people feel so happy and they want to give something back to you in return, and for what you've given them, so who are we to say no to them wanting to express their gratitude. Argh, it's too much, I don't know how it should be, what to do... and who can you ask, it's not as if it's something we all do everyday, so we're used to it.

Talk about it with Cath, Doug, she'll know what to do.

Yeah, okay I will. But still, it's not really for us to decide for you, it's your business, you're the one doing it, we're not involved in any way. I just stand helplessly looking on, looking at the wonder of it all.

I know, and I will work out what I want to do. But it's still important that you talk it all through with Cath, just talking about all you feel, all you both feel with each other, even if nothing comes of it in that you still can't work it out.

Yeah alright, I see what you're saying; because I'm feeling worked up about it, then I should talk it all through with her... yes, I like the idea of that anyway, and I can't hold all this stuff back now anyway; and perhaps as you've said, that's why she's come into my life now... oh god, what has happened to my nice peaceful life, that which I was so bored with at times wishing something would change. Well, HA! I certainly got what I wished for, it's certainly changed, and I can hardly keep up - I doubt I'll feel bored ever again!

And you're sure you're feeling all right Sage? You sure you've not got any bad, or good, feelings you should be talking about?

No, I feel a little tired, and I'll have a rest before we go and meet Cath; but other than that, I feel good, happy, I like how it is now.

Okay then, however you are sure you will talk to Cath, or to me, if you have things you do want to say?

I will.

You promise? A lot is happening for you, too, everything is so different. I keep expecting you to freak out or something, to fall in a heap saying it's too much for you and you don't want to do it. But then again, nothing bad has happened to you, it's all been good, and it's me who's freaking out about it. Yes, I'm the one who's going to fall in the heap. I mean, look at you, you're so self-contained, you're like a sage, as if nothing can affect you, even like you're somehow above it all, and yet you are still the lovely girl Sage I know, just with a few new added bits. I am raving, aren't I - but what else can I do, just sit and shut up about it, hang on like hell and see what happens. It's like I'm on the Big Dipper shooting down that fucking big ride into oblivion, and I either close my eyes and hang on, or scream all the way down like those young girls do up front. I'm like one of them, screaming, letting out the emotion of it all, because it's too much to keep in; and that is so new for me, I wasn't like that - I'm not like that, but I am - well I am now. I'm talking to myself, sorry Sage.

No Doug, really it's all right, I am enjoying listening to all you are saying, and I think you're still in a state of shock - that's what Ursula says anyway. So it's right that you are feeling all you are, and speaking about it all, and not holding it all in like you used to.

I'm in a state of shock, eh? Yes, well she might be right about that, I do feel sort of out of it. I mean, look at all that's happened: you just get up and start walking along the beach, shit I should be in the mental asylum just having witnessed that, those sorts of things just don't happen, and yet I too have taken some of it in my stride like you have. And then we won't even begin to think about all the other things you've done, let alone the fact that I have suddenly declared my deepest secret to this woman whom I'm getting married to later on today. I mean Sage, I mean, well - SHIT! I don't know what I mean. Sorry again for swearing so much, but it's all too much!

It's okay Doug, I understand; and yes, it is a lot for you.

And it's not a lot for you Sage?

No, it's just how I am.

Oh God, you are the most incredible person I know - you are, you really are!

No, I'm just me, and you are Doug, and we are going home to get ready for you to marry Cath this afternoon, that's all.

God I wish I had your composure, I'm freaking out about everything; how will I be with Cath? God I've not even had time to think about that.

You don't need time, you just do it because you want to do it, and you keep expressing all you feel along the way. And you have to start longing for the truth of your feelings, because that's how you will help yourself, and help Cath too.

Longing for the truth of them... well what exactly do you mean by that Sage?

Well, we have feelings to help us grow in the awareness of ourselves - it's how we spiritually grow.

Spiritually... what do you mean by that?

You know, advance, progress, grow toward becoming at-one with God. So if you want to do that, if you want to live a true spiritual life, then you are to grow in truth; and as the truth can only come to you through your feelings, so you have to keep wanting to know the truth of your feelings, so you have to keep longing for the truth of all you feel.

I see... and this is coming from?

Esmerelda, she's with us, close, she says it's very important for you to understand it. She says it's not so important for me because I'm still only a child, but it will be as I get older and once I'm an adult. But that I too can start longing for the truth of my feelings, which I've started doing, and you just sort of know things as you feel things.

I see. Yeah, well, I'll have to think about all of that - shit, I've suddenly got a lot to think about. Being spiritual... I've never really thought about being spiritual, it's not something that I've thought was important in my life. Other people I've met have talked about it, and like that girlfriend I was talking about earlier, but I've never really understood what they've said. So you reckon being spiritual is really just about properly attending to your feelings, like you are saying, using them to help you uncover the truth of them?

Yes, which is the truth of yourself - because you are your feelings.

Yeah, well that makes sense. Okay, so suddenly, along with everything else that's happening in my now non-boring spiritual life, if I can express all my feelings and long for the truth of them, I am being as spiritual as I can be?

Yes.

But I don't feel spiritual; I don't feel anything different.

That's just because you've got all these wrong ideas about what being spiritual is. But it's none of all that, it's just want you said about your feelings.

And so do I thank you, Sage, or Esmerelda, for telling me all of this?

Whoever you like, because we're both the same in many ways.

Oh god, no, don't do that to me, you really will do my head in... are you now saying that you're like her - an angel. So is that it Sage, you're really an angel in disguise, is that what this is all really about?

No, I'm not an angel in disguise, because remember Doug, I said angels don't incarnate, they can't come into physical form; no, I'm just me, Sage, who is really a spirit, like you Doug, who is now living in physical body; however I've been given certain powers by the Angels for certain reasons, that's all. But what I meant was, by having these powers, I'm sort of a bit like how an angel is; and by being how I am, I can sort of allow the angels to be on earth through me, if you know what I mean.

Yeah, all right, I can see that - sort of. And so Sage, are we ever going to just have a normal conversation again, like we used to, like what sort of dolly you want for your birthday, or whether or not you want to go to McDonalds for dinner - anything like that ever again?

Well I'm too big for dollies now, and I'm never going to eat all that bad food ever again. The angels won't let me, and I don't want to, anyway.

So no, okay then, out with the old and in with the new. So what will it be now, should we buy these lentils and cook them this way, or tofu perhaps - miso? And why not; hey, I don't want to eat all that junk food ever again either, so you've done me a favour there Sage. And what about going to the movies, and... and I can buy you a bike; hey, would you like that, we could all go riding along the foreshore together, yeah, how about that!?

Yes, that'd be great. I'd love a pink bike, you know Doug, like that one that girl was riding the other day.

Yes, I know, yes; I'll find out for you where we can get it, and we'll get one on the weekend or next week - how's that? First things first though, you've got to settle in at school, and I'm going to help Cath at work for my honeymoon week off - nice and romantic, eh?

She'll love that Doug, you two are so good together, and she likes it when you help her at work.

Do you really think so Sage?

Yes, oh yes, she does, you ask her; and you don't have to do that because you can see it in her eyes, they get all sparkly when you're with her and helping her with the other kids. And I want to help them too.

Yes, well, maybe I can pick you up from school and we go and help out for the rest of the afternoon - how does that sound?

Yes, I'd like that.

Good, okay then, that's settled that, one small step for mankind; now you go and have a rest, there's nothing that I need you to do-

Can I wrap the ring?

Yes, okay, why not, Cath can unwrap it when it's required. Okay, you do that, and I'll do... what will I do... god, I know, I'll run about like a headless chook flapping all over the place trying not to freak out about the fact that I'm tying the knot and getting married; me, Douglas Miles, getting married to the beautiful, gracious, and ever so lovely, Cathleen, also known as Catherine Baker - shit, who'd have known that!

I knew!

Yes, however you're turning out to be a right little smarty pants - you know everything!

Yes! Fun, isn't it!

Oh great fun, being usurped all the time by the twelve year-old.

Very nearly thirteen - three more days!

Smartarse!

Yup!

Phew, thank god that's over all Cath; I mean, I loved every moment of it with you, doing the Big One, and now here we are, alone and quiet, but god I'm happy the day is over.

Yes, I know what you mean; and me too, it's so nice being here with you Doug, it just seems so right, and I love that feeling. AND I JUST LOVE MY GORGEOUS RING, AND IT'S SUCH A PERFECT FIT. And I love that nothing is expected of me, I don't have to do anything, it's such a comforting feeling; we can sip our wine and congratulate each other, and snuggle; and, oh yes, I am so pleased it all happened, that it all came out about how we felt for each other, and just so suddenly, and just like it did - it was amazing.

Yeah... it sure was. And so Cath, how long has it been that you liked me?

Loved you, you mean Doug, that's what you wanted to ask me - isn't it? Ha! That's all right. Well I will tell you. Do you remember not long after you started coming to me with Sage, and we were together, and suddenly I lost control and couldn't hold her, and you jumped in and put your hand under mine to steady me, and we fell closer together, into each others arms really; well, that was when I knew there was something more to you, something that I wanted to be close to, something that I wanted more of - do you remember that?

Yes.

And so; what about you - how did it all happen for you?

It was a gradual feeling that grew in me each time I saw you and had more to do with you. Nothing startling to begin with, but after about a year, I knew that I liked being close to you, and I realised that I was starting to look forward to seeing you; even happy - and am I a bad person for saying this - that Sage was crippled and needing your special attention, so we could be close.

Then it was some time after that that I felt deeper feelings for you; and then I had to admit, which took weeks of accepting and trying to reconcile, that I think I was in love with you. I mean, shit, 'in love', what the hell does that mean, I certainly didn't have a clue. It was only mostly sexual infatuation with most of my previous girlfriends, that much I knew, or realised as I got older; but in love, yet still, there was this other deeper feeling. And when I started to go with it instead of resist it, because I can see now that I was scared of what it might have led to, then I just allowed those nice feelings to be within me when I was with you, like an unexpressed flower in bud, waiting there to come into bloom; and I was content to just let it be, even if nothing ever happened. And I didn't want to ruin those feelings, I didn't want to say anything in case everything got ruined; and oh I don't know, I think I was in love with you in something of a fantasy, not wanting the balloon to burst, so not wanting anything to change, not wanting to disturb anything... but thank god it did... YES, THANK YOU GOD FOR HAVING OTHER PLANS. I WAS A BIT OF WHIMP; OK, I ADMIT THAT, I WAS TOO CHICKEN TO ASK YOU OUT CATH, BUT THANK YOU GOD FOR STEPPING IN AND TAKING OVER.

It does have that feel about it, doesn't it?

It sure does, because I'd still be Dopey Dora with you, too scared of crossing that line.

And for me Doug, I didn't know if my feeling, my intuition, was right. And at times I agonised over making the first move - should I, or shouldn't I. And I too didn't want to ruin it as it was, so I can relate to what you said; but it was hard, and I didn't want to delude myself - what if I was making it all up, that it was just all my lustful thoughts in my own mind. I don't know, it's been a hard few years, wondering if I even want to keep working with the children and feeling like I'm at the end of it, it's too hard, and with so little good help; but then I can't let them down, I can't leave them, they all being so dependent on me. And then what else would I do, I could go back to nursing; but no, that's not fulfilling enough, you're just like a machine carrying out the motions, not with all the freedom to do as I please with these children. And then I'd miss seeing their little achievements, which aren't much, but for me they are; you work for a year on getting them to do one little thing, and then suddenly they do it, and it's so thrilling. And so I couldn't let that go; yet it's also so depressing, so much hardship, and so much suffering for all their families, it's all so difficult and never enough support or what they all really need to take the burden off them. To see the priceless look on the faces of Micky's mother and father and his brothers and sisters as the day wore on, as it began to sink in that that terrible burden was over - over, and so sudden, just like that. To see their faces and hearts lighten up, to see that ever-present strain leaving them, that too was wonderful.

And what's this about you telling me about my feelings, Sage insisted I ask you about it all?

Yeah, it's to do with using our feelings to uncover the truth of ourselves, that's about how I understand it. I don't know if I've properly understood, but she insists it's important, like a new way for us to live our lives, and something that would be good for our relationship.

It goes something like this: You remember speaking about how important feelings are, well really, they are ALL as important; as in, nothing else in life even matters other than what we are feeling. It's certainly a new way for me to look at things; and as I said, I don't get it all, but that we are all so conditioned and used to living with our mind in control of ourselves, that many of our feelings, and mostly so many of our bad feelings, we dismiss or shut out and refuse to deal with. And Sage, who is really Esmerelda - Sage allowing Esmerelda to speak through her, has been telling me how we should go the other way in life, so instead of denying so many of our feelings, trying to acknowledge them all, to bring them all out, every last bad one, even if means stopping everything else and attending to them; and by attending to them, I take that as making sure you express them, speak about them, the whole idea being not to keep suppressing them, to make sure they come up and out of you as you feel them.

And then on top of all that, or should I say, along with it: we are to long for the truth of our feelings; as in, the truth they are wanting us to see about ourselves, because apparently hidden or behind or within each feeling, is something it's trying to tell us about ourselves. And that is how God wants us to live - it's apparently being spiritual, or living a true spiritual life. So that's it, I think, that's about as far as I've got with it for now.

I see. Yes, I can see the truth in it, it makes sense, and so why not... is that how you'd like to live Doug?

I don't know; I don't even know if I understand it properly, let alone know how to go about it. So it makes sense to you Cath?

Absolutely, yes; and as I said yesterday, it's what I have longed to do, how I've dreamed of living, having someone with whom I can share my whole self with, telling them all I think and feel.

So that's you're take on it, then?

Yes.

Well that sounds good, the sharing your whole self with someone... or at least I think it does... but what about all those secrets, all those yukky bits; you know, those bits about yourself, or what you've done or said that you'd rather forget.

I see no reason why in a close intimate relationship all those secrets can't come out.

Really! But what if they... oh I don't know... put pressure on the relationship; I mean, what if some of what I say you don't like, and really don't like... and well, oh god, I don't even want to say it, on our honeymoon night and all... what if they cause us to have... let's say, irreconcilable differences, and we can't cope, we no longer want to be together.

But our love for each other should be able to cope with any situation - don't you think that's what a truly loving relationship is all about?

Yes, but what happens... oh shit, what happens if perhaps that love turns out not to be strong enough to withstand such devastating things.

Then the relationship ends.

Ends!

Yes, why bother continuing with it if it becomes obvious that the love isn't strong enough to withstand such things.

So do you think that love can be to different degrees?

Don't you? You don't love everyone the same.

No, of course not, no; I don't know what I thinking or trying to say.

I do like the idea of giving it a go; and if as you say, talking about our feelings is the key to a successful relationship, well maybe we can talk our way through all the bad stuff. And the bad stuff will surely come, I'm not going into this with you Doug like a teenage girl full of fantasies about love and Mr Right. However, I no doubt do have fantasies about it, and wish certain things will happen, but still I'm pragmatic; and I would hope, experienced enough, to know that bad things will happen, that we'll feel bad. But if we can share those bad feelings, then perhaps we'll not feel so alone in them.

Yeah, okay.

And then, the part about longing for the truth to see what your feelings are to tell you - to show you - about yourself, that part I am very interested in. What an incredible way to look at your feelings, and I wonder if it's true. And I guess if it's coming from Sage... so, yes to that too, I'd like to give that a go, if you're willing to join me in it Doug.

It's a bit late for that now, don't you think? What if I didn't want to, what do I do, abandon ship before we've even begun to set sail? I will give it a go; yet I have no idea how to go about it - we can ask Sage - or Esmerelda, for that.

Yes, why not, they are guiding us, they are leading the way, and that seems to be the way of our new life together, 'guided by the spirit' or angel, so to speak - so I'm all for that. It will be a good change, for as I said, I was getting fed up with how things were, so this is a fresh beginning. So, what do we do?

I don't know. Sage says that if you feel a bad feeling, you don't let it pass, you stop with it, focus on it fully accepting it; and with the emotions of it, express it the best you can; and then at the same time, long for the truth of it - want to see what it's all about - why you're feeling it, I guess.

But surely why you're feeling is obvious-

Yes, that's what I would have thought too, but Sage says there's more to it than that, there are hidden deeper underlying causes in us that will come to light as to why we're really feeling bad. So we might for example be angry with something that's happening in our life now, but as we express that anger, longing for the truth of it, it will lead us back into our earlier life connecting with the same anger we felt about other things; and then back even deeper into connecting, or I suppose, it should be reconnecting, with anger we felt with our parents when our parents treated us badly.

Oh I see, yes, that puts it in a whole new perspective.

It does?

Yes, because that means there will be a lot for us to deal with if the bad feelings we're feeling now are also going to lead us back into buried bad feelings from our past.

Yeah, I see what you mean, and I don't like the thought of that.

No, however if that's how it is, that's what's meant to be, we can only start and see what happens. So do you want to try it?

I guess so; why not, if you are, it's not as if I can say no.

You can always say no, it's your life; yet I want to give it a go Doug, and I'm glad you're at least willing to give it a try, too.

And how do you feel with Sage having so many invisible people in her life, all of which seem so advanced in their understanding of things - do you worry that it will affect her badly in some way?

Yeah a little. I keep asking her if she's okay, and does she have things she wants to tell us and feelings she should be expressing, if that's what she wants to do too, but she keeps saying she's fine, that the angels are looking after her. And from what I can see, she's not fussed or worried by any of it. In fact she's relishing it, and not just all the attention she's getting, as she doesn't seem to be too interested in that; but as she says, just being herself. It seems to me she is completely sold on the idea that this is her life-

Well, it is - isn't it?

Yes; but it's so different, so unusual-

So it sounds like you're the one who's having problems accepting it all. What's your main worry Doug?

It's that she is not going to grow up as a normal person - how will she ever have a normal life? And what if these healings keep happening; and what if they happen more often, she won't be able to keep such powers a secret - what happens then?

Well I think we just have to play it by ear, we can't make her stop; and I don't think you or I want her to stop. If it's how she is, and this *is* how she is - some sort of extraordinary phenomena, who are we to stand in the way?

I know, but what are we then to do for her?

What we're already doing. Just be there for her and keep doing all the necessary day to day life organising things, and see what she wants to do. I think we have to throw the normal how-it's-done book out the window, this is way bigger than anything we are.

So you feel all right about her speaking with all these strangers in her head all day long?

Yes, I can't see it having any adverse effects on her; and as you said, in fact it's the very opposite, she's coming more out of herself, her self-confidence is growing, I can see that in such a short time. She's even growing into a woman, and one who's more sure of herself, which is far more than how I felt at her age.

But what about her mixing with other children her own age; instead all her friends, other than you and I, are invisible - in her head.

Oh I wouldn't worry about any of that. Time for introspection, especially at that age, is a good thing. I wish I'd done more of it, and it's all naturally happening to her. She's not a regular child, you forget Doug that she has been a cripple most of her life, viewing life from that perspective, she's long ago understood that she can't be normal, and she's adjusted or adapted to that. And now she's suddenly normal by those physical standards, but her state of mind hasn't changed; and I can see that really that might even be a blessing for her, as she's not torn between trying to be a normal teenage girl getting caught up in every emotional drama that comes her way, and trying to be this Healer-woman. So you'd have to say it's all for the best. And who knows, it might even turn out that the accident was the best thing for her, so as to prepare her for her adult life, all of which seems to be starting now.

That's what she says herself.

So there you go; and as we can't do anything about it, it's just going to be one long amazing journey for the two of us, because we're going to be privy to it all. And so think about that Doug, what an extraordinary thing that's happening for us.

I know, I do think about it; I can't stop thinking about it, and it's nearly freaking me out.

So alright, that's a bad feeling, so do you want to talk more about it... and long for the truth it is to help you see about yourself?

Alright, I suppose I can try and give it a go. So what do I do... I feel like I'm freaking out, or nearly so-

So what does that feel like?

Like I'm going to start madly pulling my hair out, running around screaming, like I've lost it, and

they cart me off and put me in the funny farm - he's got a disturbed mind, they will say; and I don't want a disturbed mind. I quite liked my mind before such disturbances-

Alright, so have you longed for the truth of these feelings, of feeling like you're freaking out?

How could I have longed, I've only just finished saying how it makes me feel. Hold on, I try and long, and how do you long anyway?

I don't know, I guess you want with you all your heart to know the truth of your freaking-out feeling; and ask God, I suppose, if you have to ask someone, to help you see the truth of it.

Alright, I'll try it... hold on a moment.

Speak it out loud, don't just say it in your mind.

Yeah? All right. I want to know, please God, the truth of why I'm feeling like I'm freaking out. I mean, I know why I'm freaking out, these things have never happened to me before, and it's all so new and I don't understand, it's like it's too much for me to deal with, so I'm scared that I will lose it and really freak out, and have something like a mental breakdown; anyway, so please God, can you help me see the truth of my freaking out feeling, because like Sage says, she reckons there will be deeper reasons in me as to why I'm freaking out. There - how was that?

It's not for me to know, it's for you Doug; if you feel good about it, then that's as it is. It sounded good, all you said.

Good... and well, I do want to know about why I'm freaking out if there are other things for me to see about it - I do, and I can feel that *really* I do; it scares me shitless thinking what horrors might be hidden in me, but I do want to know... at least I think I want to know.

You sound genuine enough Doug - and now what do you do?

Nothing, you long for the truth of your feelings, and then you just keep expressing all you feel, you apparently don't try and fish for the hidden meaning using your mind, you just stay with the bad feelings, speaking all they are making you feel, and wait for the truth to come to light in its own time.

Okay then; so do you feel any more bad feelings?

Hmm, let me see... yeah, yes, I do, I feel petrified; I do, like I'm going to shit my pants or something, really scared, oh so scared, and I don't think I've felt this scared since I was a child. I can remember feeling like I needed to go to the toilet, but for some reason I couldn't, and I was so scared that I'd shit myself, and I think I even did. Yes, it was so humiliating, and mum was so

angry with me for not telling her; but I think I tired, yet she wouldn't listen; or, I don't know, it was too long ago and I can't really remember, it's all foggy and hazy now, but it was something like that. And I was so scared that she'd be angry with me, that she'd freak out, and... Ha! Well, there you go, that's incredible, do you see that Cath, that mum would freak out, and yet I'm the one feeling like I'm freaking out.

Yes, interesting. So are you actually worried and scared of your mother freaking out, and you've just taken that on as your own fear; or are you also worried about yourself freaking out? Did you ever freak out, can you remember?

I have some sort of memory... although I don't know if it's really mine or just what I've been told, but I think I did freak out; and I pushed the stand over that had all the glassware on it, and there was a hell of a noise of the glass crashing to the floor and breaking, and mum and dad were both roaring at me, and I *was* freaking out, I remember that part.

So you were freaking out before you pushed it over, or you pushed it over because you were freaking out: Why do you think you were freaking out, what had happened?

Na, I don't know about that, I can't remember.

And so how do you feel now?

Still a little shaky, as if I am back there with mum and dad looking at all the smashed glasses, and they are yelling at me not to move, and all I want to do is run away - get out of there, get as far away as possible.

So what do you think or feel about seeing all of that?

Well, it's a surprise, I've not thought about that for years. And I guess it's quite amazing how it just came up... do you really think it did because of my talking about my freaking-out feeling, and longing to know the truth of why I was feeling it?

Yes, I think so, there's no reason why you'd just start remembering such an early and forgotten childhood memory, so it must have been to do with it.

Hmm. So is that what it's all about, looking back into your past like that... but what's that for?

I don't know... possibly to clear away all the forgotten bad stuff from your past. To deal with all the bad things that happened to you back then, which you've just forgotten about.

But why would we have to deal with them?

Because they weren't dealt with?

Hmm, I guess so.

You'll have to ask Sage.

Why don't you ask her?

Yes, all right; why not, I will. Yes, that's right, she's in my life now, almost something like a daughter for me.

Yes, I hoped you'd see her in that light. That we're in this together with her, that we're all equals, even though of course I've had more to do with her; and you possibly even know her better than I do - know what's going on in her mind; I mean, being a woman and all, and having already spent so much time working with her at the clinic.

We have spent a lot of time talking together, it's mostly what we did, so it's not so much to shift out of work mode into being in a family situation now, as that's what it is. Yes, and I like the idea of that.

Do you feel like sharing another bottle?

Coming right up.

Now Sage, call me Ruth, and you sit down there and we'll have a little chat. Okay, I'm going to level with you, because you know anyway, don't you, that I'm like you in some ways, although you have the Power, whereas it was never granted to me.

Why wasn't it?

It wasn't time in my day, whereas people can deal with it more now.

And do you feel bad about that?

No, not anymore. I did, yes, when I understood what I was missing out on, what was naturally part of my birthright, but something that was going to always be kept from me, at least until my life on earth came to its end. But that was all a long time ago, and being here at this school I've come see there are other compensations, other things for me to do, other ways in which I've been able to use my meagre abilities to help people, and so that's been good for me. But as I said, no, I don't resent you, nor am I jealous; and in fact, I'm in awe of you, as I understand just what it is that you've taken on. And so am I right in understanding that you have just had a major healing experience happen to you?

Yes, I was a cripple since four years old, mum and dad and my little brother being killed in a car accident. And then, the other evening on the beach, Esmerelda came to me and healed me, and now I can walk.

She being your guiding Healing Angel?

Yes, that's right. She's always with me, looking after me, she's here now standing over there.

Yes, and of course you have full Second Sight?

It's growing in me; I'm learning how to attune my inner sight, when to look and when not to. I can sort of turn it on and off, or just keep it dim in the background, but sometimes that gets a bit too much when there's a lot of things going on.

Too much because of what's going on here on the material realm, and what's going on over there in the spiritual one... yes of course, I understand.

And you Ruth, can speak to them too - can you see them?

Only a little, more vague impressions, enough to know they are with me, should they want me to know that. I can sense, but not see your Angel over there; and I can speak with my 'Friends', as I call them, rather easily in my mind, that being something I've developed and got better at over the years - as I've matured.

And so tell me Sage - is that what I am to call you, do you want to be known by Sage, or by your soulname - do you have your soulname yet?

I do, but Sage is good, that's what I want.

All right then; and so you have, so my Friends tell me, full Healing Powers, that they've been bestowed on you, and are slowly awakening in you - is that right?

Yes.

And do you have any idea as to what that will mean, as in what you're going to do with your life?

No, only, and please don't tell Doug or Cathy, or anyone else this, only that I'm not going to live very long.

Yes, I understand; and no of course not, I wouldn't say any of this to anyone, this is all strictly between you and I. And for that matter Sage, I want you to understand that if you want me to help you in any way, just say so, and I really mean that. I would like to be something of perhaps a grandmother to you, someone who is always there for you, and I will always put you first. I mean that Sage, if you wanted me to, I would give up being the Headmistress and leave the school in an instant, and follow you. I am at your service, so please keep that in mind; and any time you want to talk to me, anything you want to talk about, and especially to do with the spiritual areas of life, I am here for you.

Thank you Ruth.

I love you Sage, and I will miss you when you are gone, I can feel that already; yet that's as it's meant to be, too. I understand that, the world wouldn't be able to cope with the likes of you here for too long. And so you will have, no doubt, a lot to do in a short time.

Yes, so they tell me.

And have they been specific with you as to what you will be doing?

No, only that it will build up, and be nothing that I can't cope with.

Good. You are good hands Sage, that I know - that I can feel! Nothing bad is going to happen to you, that too I can see; and when your time comes, you will know, and it will be so, just as everything else is now, just so.

Yes.

Very good. Alight, Miss Price will be here soon, and I'll introduce you to her. There is no one else that I know of who will be aware of what and who you really are Sage, so we can easily keep it a secret. And I think you'll fit in, there are a couple of mischievous boys in your new class, but really they are just young and testing out their boundaries, they won't mean or do you any harm.

So, is there anything else we need to talk about today?

No, thank you Ruth, I like all you've told me, and should I need to, I will come to you.

Good. I understand all of this, even just starting a real school is new for you, so as there will be a lot of adjusting for you to go through. I'll be keeping an eye on you from a distance, I don't want to interfere in any way. Ah! Here she is...

You're the new girl - so what's your name, then?

Sage.

Sage? What sort of name is that?

What's your name, then?

Tommy.

And what sort of name is that?

What do you mean, it's me name, I'm Tommy, every one knows that.

Alright then Tommy, pleased to meet you.

You're alright then Sage; yeah, I'm pleased to meet you, too. Do you want to sit next me in class, you don't want to be up the front where they put you, come and join me down the back, and we'll have some fun together.

Yes alright, I'd like that, thank you Tommy.

"Yes, all right, I'd like that, thank you Tommy" - I like how you speak.

And how do I speak.

I dunno know, just different like, sounds different, but nice, soft, and calming like, soothing - yeah, that's what it makes me feel.

And is that good?

Shit yeah, bloody good, it's very nice. It's why I want you to sit next to me, so I'll feel calmed - nice I reckon.

Alright then, that's good.

Yeah I reckon too - say, will you be my girlfriend Sage?

I've only just met you Tommy!

Yeah, but that's all right, you can still be my girlfriend; and I'll look after you, I'll keep all the other boys away from you so they won't bother you.

But what if I want to be with them too; and what if you are bothering me...

Oh Jeez, don't say that Sage, that's not what I want to hear, I don't want to be a bother to you... should I go-

No, no don't go, I don't know anyone else.

Ah, that's better, I don't want to go... I like you, you're different.

How so?

Like that, like asking me that question to what I said. You make me have to think-

And is that good?

Hell yeah... and you know what, you make me feel important, like you're interested in me; yeah, that's it, like what I say means something to you - you listen.

Well it does, doesn't everyone listen?

Not in my life, unfortunately. Sometimes me mum and dad do, but mostly they are doing their thing, as are my older brothers and sisters; I'm the youngest, and sort of just get left a lot to look after myself.

I'm sorry to hear that Tommy, that's not nice, it's not good feeling left alone.

No, it's not; but it's okay too, as it allows me to nick off and do things they don't know I'm doing...

But still you'd rather they wanted you and wanted to listen to all you had to say.

Yes, yes I do. That's right Sage. Say, how old are you?

Nearly thirteen.

Yeah me too.

Well I like listening to you Tommy.

You do, you really mean it Sage?

Yes.

Good, so will you be my girlfriend and keep listening to me?

I'll think about it, the girlfriend part; but I'll keep listening to you if you keep talking to me.

All right, it's a deal, let's shake on it. Gee! What a hot hand you have, are they always that hot?

Mostly, they are now, they didn't used to be.

Why, what happened?

I had an accident when I was young, and I couldn't walk properly, and I often felt cold; but now I'm alright, and feeling hotter.

Shit yeah, I'm glad you're feeling better too, so is that why you've come to school now?

Yes.

Hey, come on, that's the bell, come with me, and as I said, you can sit with me, I'm sure Miss Price won't mind.

*

OW, OW, OOOWWWWWW, OWWWW-

What happened Ricky?

He fell out of the tree and hurt his leg, Miss.

OW, OWWWW, OWWW-

Tony, can you stand?

NOOOOOOOOOOOO-

All right then, don't move and I'll be back soon, I'm going to get help.

OW, OWWWW OWWW, OW, OW, MY LEG IT HURTS, IT'S BROKEN I THINK, OW OW-

It's all right Tony, that's your name isn't it?

YEAH, WHO ARE YOU?

Sage, I'm new here today, and is this where it's sore?

YEAH, OW, OW, OW, DON'T TOUCH IT FOR GOD'S SAKE!

It's all right, I won't hurt you, I'll help you, I'll fix it, just relax, I'll take the pain away... there now, can you feel it going...

Yeah... Yeah I can!

And now I'll fix the break, it's not too serious and you'll be fine in no time, and then you'll be able to stand and carry on climbing the tree, just don't fall out of it again.

No. I won't, it was stupid of me, I'm a good tree-climber... yeah, that feels good, gee, your hands feel all warm... now they are burning hot, but it feels so good, and it doesn't hurt anymore. What did you say your name was?

Sage.

Oh gee, wow, Sage, thank you, that's feeling really good now.

Yes, it's all over, you won't have any more problems with that, here, see if you can get up and stand on it.

SHIT YEAH, RIGHT AS BLOODY RAIN! Jesus, did you see that Ricky, she fixed me leg. How did you do that Sage?

The angels helped me.

Angels?

Yes.

Shit, I've never heard of that before.

No, not many people have, but it's something I can do.

Tony, we've got a stretcher... but... but you're all right, you're standing on it, it looked very bad?

Yeah, I know Miss, but Sage fixed it - it was the angels who done it, they helped Sage fix it, her hands were burning hot, but it felt good, even cool in a funny sort of way - she's terrific. Thank

you Sage, do you want to climb the tree too?

*

So Sage, you didn't waste any time. Is that how it is for you, you are drawn to help?

Yes Ruth, it just takes me over, and before I know what's happening, I'm doing it.

And how do you feel about that, are you okay with that?

Yes... but I would like to have more control with it all, I think I should know more about what I'm doing.

No Sage, that would only be tying up your mind, I think it's better to go the other way and not know, just to act like you are doing. What you need to know will come to you. And it's only through experiences of doing it that it will explain itself to you. You can't control it, that sort of power is uncontrollable, it will just do its own thing, and it's not for you or any of us to control, that's what's so wonderful about it. It's not up to us, it's all what God wants for us, so you are just a vehicle for God to express Himself through, like we all are.

Anyway, you've sure got tongues wagging, not bad for your first day, a very impressive introduction to your new classmates. So I guess you'll have no trouble then, they'll all be in awe of you, and I hope it doesn't go the other way and against you, making them be afraid of you, afraid of such strange things. Anyway, we can only deal with that if it happens; however for the time being, everything seems fine, they are very impressed, as I am too, that the Angels healed Tony's leg. Well done Sage, that was so nice of you, such a loving thing to do.

But it wasn't me Ruth.

Ah, yes my dear girl, it was. It takes the two of you, you and the angels - remember. You are just as necessary as they are, you don't see the angels just taking it upon themselves to heal all those in need, do you; so it's you and they, you are just as important as they are. So you can think about that, because those people can't see the angels, they can only see you, so you're going to be the recipient of all the praise. And I thought you might want to say that God did it, and not mention the angels, but then again, it's one and the same, because the angels only do what God wants them to do, which is what you are doing too; and saying the angels do it has such a nice feel about it. We all want to know our angels are close to us and helping us in life. We want to know God is too, but there's that something extra special about the angels, and possibly it's because they are closer to us, God being so far away. Anyway Sage, I'm happy to see you've settle in and left your mark already, so we'll see what happens next, I guess.

Thank you Ruth.

Sage, why are you so insistent on our paying proper attention to our feelings?

Because Cath, it's how you can heal yourself.

Heal myself - how, what do you mean by that?

My understanding - what they've told me - is everyone is in a bad state, one way or another, and it's all because of what happened to them during their childhood. And that no one has had a truly loving childhood; and so because of that, everyone has repressed or buried issues and pain left over from their childhood that needs to be resolved and brought out of them.

I see, so that's why when we long for the truth, the deeper things going on within us, those things we're not aware of, are so important.

Yes. And it's all got to come out. You are to feel your feelings allowing them to be as they are, and then by wanting to see the truth of them, they will lead you deeper into your forgotten past bringing to light all the bad things that happened to you and all the buried bad feelings to do with them.

And how do you know all of this?

It's not really me Cath talking to you now, I'm speaking Esmerelda, she's in my mind; in fact she's standing right beside you, telling me to tell you what she's saying to me. So she puts the words in my mind, and I speak them as if she's speaking them - I guess.

Do you understand then what you're saying?

No, not really, some of it, but they say it doesn't matter for me, that really I'm not to be as you and Doug can be, because I'm still in my childhood. I've got other work to do, and later on when I'm older, I can work with my feelings more. They say for the time being that I am simply to act on my feelings, and not to think about why, just to be like how a young child is, it is always acting on its feelings as its mind is not developed enough to know why it's doing what it does.

Yes, that's right.

So they say, I am to do my sort of healing - with the angels; and you and Doug are to do your sort of healing - with your feelings. And that my sort of healing is really only like putting a band-aid on the person's sore, I can fix a broken bone like Tony's the other day, and it helps him in one way, but it also stops him from having the experience of having the broken leg and going through all he would go through with it - all the bad, and even possibly, good feelings.

Yes, I'd not thought of it in that light. It's complicated, isn't it? So do you ever think that you

shouldn't interfere with what might naturally happen?

Yes, at times I've thought about it, but the Sisters assure me that it's not important, as it can go both ways. It might be for example, just as important, and even more important, for Tony - because it happened that I fixed his leg - to be fixed by me and the angles. That he might gain more things out of my fixing it, than had it naturally healed.

Yes, yes, I can see that too. Oh god Sage, you are so wise, and so young.

It's not me, it's what they say, and it makes sense, so then they say that all I need do is keep on doing as I have done, knowing that God wants me to do what I do for those people I help, and that's just life. That it might be a miracle to some people, but for me it's the same as if I were playing the piano well and people liked that. It's just what I can do, and I like doing it, it makes me feel good, and it's easy to do, I don't even have to think about it.

But what about if lots of people hear about you and they all want you to heal them - how will you deal with that, have you thought about that too?

Yes, as the Sisters have told me, that I'm just to say that it's not my doing, it's all in God's or the angels hands, and so I can't actually help anyone unless they want me to. So it's not up to me, so I might help some people, yet not others. And as to why it's like that, I don't know, but the Sisters tell me they do, and they will tell me if I need or want to know. But I don't, not yet anyway, because it's all so new, and I'm happy to have done what I did. And so far, no one has asked me.

It's all fascinating, that's for sure. Incredibly so; and how you are managing to take it all so easily, poor old Doug is afraid he'll freak out-

I know, and I don't like him worrying about me so much.

It's not your fault, it's all his own doing, and I'll look after him. You don't have to worry about anything, and he'd never blame or accuse you of doing anything wrong; oh God no, don't even think that; and besides, he did what you said about paying attention to his feelings, and amazingly, as you said it would, he regressed, I suppose you could call it that, back into a time when he was younger and understood he felt freaked out back then, so his feeling freaked out now might be to do with it back then, and so not even to do with it now. It's all extraordinary, what you - or rather the Sisters and Esmerelda - are proposing; I think that sort of healing, our healing ourselves by using our own feelings, might appeal to a lot of people.

And yes, I now see what you mean by what you do is sort of band-aid healing, even though it's fantastic and miraculous, it's still all on the surface, just fixing a damaged or dysfunctional body or mind, sort of like making sure the car can keep running, but it's not actually doing anything about sorting out and healing any deeper hidden problems that there might be.

Yes, so that's what you are helping Doug and I to see, that which you are talking about concerning our feelings, is really about the - what, how might you say it - real, or true healing that a person can do, whereas your sort of healing is really a quick fix.

That's right. It was time for Micky to stop having the experience of being retarded like he was, and so now he can have the experience of being normal and like all the other kids, but still within him will be the hidden answer as to why he was retarded to begin with, what happened to him on deeper levels to make him be as he was.

Oh God Sage, I've never ever thought of it like that. That is incredible. You are too much! And I can't get over talking to an only just thirteen year old who is more wise and knowledgeable about these things than any adult I've known. God, most of what you are saying I don't know if anyone knows, I've read a lot and been interested in all sorts of alternative therapies and psychology, all hoping it might help me with my kids, but I've not come across anything quite like what you're saying. Some people have touched on some of the parts, as some things you say are familiar to me, but you always take it much further; you are incredible Sage... but I suppose I'll get used to it, like so many other things that are changing in my life.

I do hope so Cath, because I love you, and I want us to get on well.

Oh me too darling, and we will, I assure you, nothing is going to stop that. I'd give up everything for you if it came to that, I'm well and truly on your side.

Like Ruth.

Meaning?

Well, and I don't know if I should tell you this, but Ruth is sort of a bit like me. She doesn't have the Healing Powers, but she has an understanding of what's going on with me.

Oh that's terrific, wow, that's great to hear Sage, Doug will be pleased, that will help ease his mind a little. Did Ruth tell you things?

Yes, she knew I was coming to the school, and why I've been given such powers, and she also said she'd help me however I needed it.

Good, oh I'm so pleased; and what a coincidence, that school, just up the road, and of all the schools you could have gone to.

But that's how it is Cath, for all of us in life, it's all perfect for what we need, even if it's the bad things, they are still what we need, even though at the time we might not understand that. So really there's no such thing as a coincidence, it's all been perfectly planned out for us. We only see

it as being coincidental because we don't understand or feel how it really is.

It just keeps coming, you make me feel like I should carry around a note pad and pen when I'm with you, so I can record what comes out of your mouth.

I asked about that, if I should write things down too, but they said no, it's too laborious; and even though it might get lost, the information and understanding is always there, and it will come back through other people when they need it. There's lot of spirits and angels helping people all the time Cath, all in different ways.

I've not thought about it like that, but possibly you are right; I don't know, and I guess I won't know until I die. I do believe in life after death, and you're helping me to feel strong in that belief, Sage.

Oh yes, there is, it's where we are all going sooner or later, into the spirit worlds. At night sometimes they take me out and I travel around looking at all the places and people - who are called spirits, over there, it's good fun.

Have you always done that?

Yes, the first time I remember was when the accident happened, I remember being with whom I now know was Ursula, looking down on the ambulance and seeing them putting mummy and daddy into it. She told be that were going to die and that Doug would come and look after me, and she too would look after me from her side of things, and that I had nothing to worry about, and that my mummy and daddy would be fine in their new life in spirit, and that I'd meet them in a dream when I was older.

And have you met them... you haven't told Doug this, have you?

No, I've not told anyone because it's been my own secret.

You don't have to tell me if you don't want to, although it's a bit late now for that.

Yes, I do want to tell you; I want to share it with you Cath, just you and me, so you will know a little more about me than anyone else does.

Alright, I can accept that; I promise I won't tell a soul, not even Doug.

Oh I don't really mind if you tell him, but I want to tell you anyway.

Alright.

It was on the night of my tenth birthday. I had a dream in which I walked up the pathway of a nice house and it had flowers all along the side of the path, and when I got to the front door, it opened, and there was mum and dad. And they were so happy to see me-

Hang on a sec darl, sorry for interrupting, but you said you walked?

Yes, I've never been a cripple in my spirit dreams, so I've always known that it would end one day - I thought it would when I died.

I see, please, carry on... no hang on a moment, sorry again Sage-

That's okay.

So could that be possible for all my lot, will they all be normal when they die?

Oh yes, that's what happens, there are no cripples or spastics or retarded people - spirits - over there, all that gets fixed up.

And how do you know for sure?

Esmerelda has told me, she says it's part of what the Angels of Death do for such people, they 'remake' them in their perfect spirit body.

Fascinating. All right, please go on about you meeting with your parents.

Yes, and we all hugged each other, they were so happy to see me and to see that I was okay. And we went inside, they said it was a new house they were living their new lives in spirit in. It had been a blessing that they both died at the same time, because it meant they wouldn't be separated in their new life, so they could just continue on together; and with Matthew, but they so dreadfully missed me. They said they were allowed to visit me, they can come down to sort of see into earth and be near people on earth, and so they would see what I was up to and how I was going, and try and help Doug with me.

And it was all so nice, and it made me feel that really it was like the accident didn't happen, but it did; yet in some way, we were all still together, and I know that might sound strange, but do you see what I mean Cath?

Yes honey, I do. It's so touching, it's making me want to cry. Yes, I can see that it's nothing like what we might think it is; oh God, if only everyone knew there was so much more to our lives than just this small bit on earth.

Yes, that's what I think too.

Have you seen them again?

No, Ursula says there's no need to, that they have different lives to live than what I'm living; and you know, although I thought I would always want to see them and never not see them, since the other day with Esmerelda fixing my legs, I no longer feel I need to see them. I am happy to know they are there and happy, and that one day I'll see them again, and that I don't feel I need to keep seeing them now - and that makes me feel good.

Hmm... I see. Gosh, I've never thought so much in my life, as being with you Sage. You leap from one incredible thing to another, making it all sound so natural.

But it is, it's just that most people don't want to see it.

No, I guess they don't. I didn't, it just didn't happen for me, it wasn't to be until now I guess - as you might say.

That's right. When it's the right time for you, what you need will happen. I know that, and it's right for all of us.

Yes, as you said, even the bad stuff; and that is something very new for me to think along those lines. So you think that all that's bad that happens to us, happens on purpose, and it's not just our bad luck?

Everything happens on purpose Cath, nothing is random like most people think. So yes, all the bad stuff is what we need, too.

But why do we need it, when it makes us feel so bad?

I don't really know the answer to that... oh, Esmerelda has come back, and she says it's because that's what God wants us to experience - the good and the bad. And the bad is very important because there is a lot for us to understand about it. It's all to do with the relationships we have with our parents and the people who look after us when we are young; and if those relationships are bad or unloving in anyway, then that forms patterns for our later life based around those bad things and bad feelings, and the same with good things, we form good patterns; so life keeps repeating the good and the bad, but all on a feelings level, so the good feelings and the bad feelings keep coming up for us, all until we stop and start paying attention to them. She says we're to understand about what not feeling fully loved feels like and what it's all about. That's what this world is about. But that will change into people being able to understand what feeling fully loved is if they attend properly to their feelings, like she's been helping you understand.

I see.

Cath, can I ask you something?

Yes of course Sage, please, anything.

You're not upset with me for doing what I did to Micky, are you?

Upset? What do you mean?

Like mad at me that I fixed him so that he no longer needs to go to your work.

OH GOD NO SAGE; no, my love, no, no, no, not at all; oh no, don't you even think like that for one moment; no, nothing could be further from it; no, I love what you did, it was one of the best things that's happened to me in my life. Oh Sage, I wish you could come and fix them all, and put me out of a job! No, my dear, what you did was so amazing; I'm still not over the shock, I still can't understand what you did and how it came about, and if I hadn't seen Micky with my own eyes, and known how he was before, I'd not have believed you. But no, no, no, no Sage, no, I am not upset or mad with you at all; no, the very opposite, I am so pleased you helped me.

Oh good, then that's all right, I was just wondering.

Oh God Sage, it IS all right, and please don't ever hesitate to ask me if you ever feel bad about anything like that again - bad about anything. I'm pleased you did ask me; and, no, I assure you that I am completely happy, more than happy, gloriously happy, over the moon about what you did to Micky, and I want to give you a big hug.

*

She okay?

Yes, she's in bed and I turned the light off. We had a very good talk... I think it was the most amazing mind-expanding talk I've ever had in my life, and with a just thirteen year old. Who'd have know?

Mind expanding is right, I don't know if mine will ever be the same again.

I think Doug, that's the whole point. I don't think we are to be the same again. That old way of life I think we can kiss it goodbye, and from the way Sage seems to be taking it in her stride, I don't know what to expect.

Best not to think about it Cath.

Yes, I think you're right, but how can you not think about it - can you please tell me that?

Nope, I can't, as I can't stop thinking about it, there's so many things that come into my mind and go again, and I think: I must ask Sage about that, then: I must tell Cath, and then... and I can't keep up. What say we go to bed ourselves?

Yes, why not, I'm exhausted.

*

So what did you both talk about?

Feelings, going over all of that again... although not all of it, but some of it, I'll tell you more about in the morning. She's such an extraordinary girl, how she lives in the two dimensions seemingly so easily at the same time. With all that going on in her mind all the time, being able to see and speak so easily with the spirits and Esmerelda - God, would I love to see her myself!

Have you asked Sage to describe her to you, and to tell you about the angels?

No, have you?

We've talked a little. She said Esmerelda is about three metres tall, however when she is with Sage, she seems to be about the height of a normal adult. And apparently she's a beautiful looking 'woman', with long silver hair. But she's not a woman spirit, she's an angel who is pretending to look like a woman for us, or for Sage, I should say; it being how she presents herself to Sage, because really we can't see or know what an angel looks like, something like shimmering light I think Sage said.

Oh Doug, does it give you goose pimples thinking about angels?

No, I like the idea of-

Oh it gives me such a thrill.

Well Sage, or was it Esmerelda, it's hard to know whom I'm talking with half the time-

Yeah, I know what you mean-

Yeah, well one of them said that we all have two guardian angels always with us and always looking after us; and if I wanted to, she'd introduce me to mine, but I don't know how she'd do that, and we got sidetracked in that conversation.

I'd love to meet my angels Doug; and that's what is said about them, that we have a pair who look

after each of us, it's something I've always dreamed about.

Yeah, well, you'll have to ask Sage about it.

I will.

And one of them said, that angels mostly don't help us humans in the ways we think they do. And the sorts of miracle healings they do for us with Sage, are very rare, and apparently over the eons, there's been very few people they have worked with like they are with Sage.

Oh Doug, you are giving me more goose pimples, look at my arm, I'm shivering with the thrill of it all.

Ah dam; and I thought you were shivering because of lying so close to me?

Different type of shivering. Please go on.

Yes, so it's something very rare, and really we're privileged.

Yes, I feel we are too. Look at what happened to Micky, I still can't believe it.

Yes I know, it's incredible and I can't get my mind around it at all. So I'm trying not to, as Sage or one of them said, that would be the best thing for me to do.

And there are apparently masses of different types of angels, big ones and small ones, and they all work in pairs. And I don't know why that is, but I guess it makes more sense.

And they all have names if we want them to have them, otherwise so far as they are concerned in their relating to each other, they all have numbers, and the numbers all mean things, like when they were created, and in what legion they belong, their ranking, and things like I think. It's as if they are, or some of them are, organised like an army, so I guess the stuff in the Bible about the armies of angels might have some truth to it.

Fascinating.

Yeah, and Esmerelda is one of a special type of angel, her and her friend - other half, are here to specifically help Sage. Now what did she call them.... oh yes, Brilliant Evening Stars. And these higher angels only come at very special times in the history of a world, alluding to the fact that other things might be going on concurrently with what's happening to Sage, but she wasn't wanting to elaborate on that.

So Esmerelda and her partner, from what I can gather, orchestrate the whole proceeding; so with say Micky, there will be lots of angels working with him to heal him at once, with Esmerelda and her partner calling the shots - or something like that. And I'm sure it's not as crude as I make it sound.

And they work with Light. Apparently all they do is with light. I don't what 'The Light' is, but spirit light, or some sort of light in spirit - perhaps even, Angel Light? And what they do in their healing, is by using light, manipulate the material, spirit and subtle forms, being able to bring about the healing.

Sage reckons they can do anything; they can alter anything and everyone on the world, from anything to do with our bodies, to change the substance of rock, turn lead into gold, whatever it is you want... or rather, what God wants, they don't just do what we want.

No, because if they did, we'd have them running all over the place, getting them to make us rich.

Yeah, probably, something like that. Alright angels - my angels, if you are real, show me by making a lump of gold appear in my hand!

Oh Doug, you can't fool around like that.

No, I guess you're right; sorry about that angels, I didn't mean to disrespect you. No, that wasn't good of me, was it Cath?

No it wasn't. No, it's serious stuff Doug, you have to take it seriously.

But Sage says you can ask them to do anything you like, yet they won't do it, they'll just ignore you unless it's what God wants them to do, they don't do our work, only God's work.

And thank God for that! And do they have wings, as in all those paintings of angels?

I asked her that too. No, apparently they don't, and those that do, don't have wings like the big bird wings those artists depict, that's all fanciful. What some of them have are something like what could be called friction shields or heat shields, that people have mistaken in visions as being wings. The angels with those things are transport seraphim, they being able to somehow entomb us, or wrap us up in their 'wings', whilst they transport us about the universe, this all of course happening when we're in spirit. That sometimes we might need to go on very long journeys, which would take us how we normally move in spirit, too long; and when we cross the threshold into new spirit worlds; and when we die here on earth, we use those angels to help us. Neat huh! Just imagine that, being wrapped up snugly in your angel, that then blasts off shooting around the universe, and you feel all protected and like nothing is happening.

How do you know you'd feel like that, it might be very exhilarating, you might feel like you're the angel.

Hey! Even better!

Oh yes, the thought just popped into my head, a bit more Sage said; that, you know when you die and the cord is cut connecting your physical body with your spirit body-

No, I didn't know that-

Well neither did I, but I sound like I know what I'm talking about, don't I! Anyway, it's one of our angels that cuts the cord so our physical body 'dies', it being a cord of light, or something like that. It reminds me of being born and the cord being cut. So a cord is cut when we're born, and when we die. Hmm, there must be something significant in that?

And as I said, don't get the light bit, everything being of light, and so everything having a vibration or resonance; and the angels can somehow change or manipulate that vibration, or change the frequency, and do what they do; such as make themselves materialise on earth, or make something disappear, or do what they did to Micky and Tony and that woman in the crystal shop; and what they did to Sage herself, of course.

And all of this information, everything Sage has picked up in such a short time, she's learning more in a few weeks than I ever learnt at years at school.

Well apparently, so I'm beginning to find out, it's not just these last couple of weeks, as she's now saying that she's been secretly in communication with her invisible friends for some time, if not years. She's still a bit cagey about that with me, but she might open up more with you Cath. And I don't blame her, I think it's right that she has her own secrets and private world. I did when I was a kid, and I still do in a way, I think we all do, or should do.

But aren't you going to tell me everything now?

Oh yeah - everything. Yes well, that's right, that will take some doing; but yes, you are right, that is my new intention - I forgot about it. It's one thing agreeing in the moment as it sounds like a good idea, but then when you actually have to come to do it, well, that's another matter entirely.

She asked me if I was angry with her for healing Micky.

And what did you say?

No, I stressed to her that not at all.

Why would she think you'd be angry? I thought she and everyone would think it was the greatest thing that could happen to someone like him.

She was worried that she had interfered with my work, that she'd taken one of my patients away from me - something like that, I think. It was one of those remarks that threw me, because it too was the last thing I'd think anyone might think about. She is being so considerate of my feelings, that's really being very mature, being able to consider all sides in everything and everyone's feelings.

Did she say she also felt bad, or was wondering if it was right for Micky's family to suddenly have him a normal child again, because that's what's been playing on my mind. It's such a shock, and initially it might all seem so good, but what if Micky doesn't actually fit into his new life, there's a lot he will have to come to terms with. And all the roles are well established in his family, they've not known anything else, and now suddenly to have everything changed; what if it's like when you hear of those people who suddenly win the lotto and come into millions of dollars not having had such large amounts of money before, and it ruins their lives, bringing out the worst in everyone, or whatever else happens. I don't know, and don't get me wrong, I wish Micky all the best, but as I said, it's just been playing on my mind as a little doubt: what if this healing thing causes more problems than it actually heals?

I've not thought of it that way, but yes, I suppose it could happen... anything could happen. But then anything happens all the time in life anyway, people suddenly have awful accidents and their whole life changes, or like you said about winning such large amounts of money and not being able to cope with it, everything suddenly being turned on its head. So I can see such healings in that light too, even being part of normal every day life, it's just that we're not used to it.

Yeah I guess, as you say, we're not used to it. And so yes, if that happened regularly, then I guess just like everything, there would be good and bad depending on what happens to everyone involved. Yes, I can accept that - thanks Cath, I think you've helped me resolve that worry, I can accept that now. So really it's not for us to judge, is it, like everything in life, although we always do; but if it happens, so it does along with everything else, and naturally we all think it will be a good thing because someone is miraculously healed, and we all want the pain and suffering to be taken away; however, as far as all the consequences of such an action, as you said, it's like any action, and there's always going to be good and bad that result.

Ah, so that's good Cath, all summed up nicely; yes, thank you again, I feel really good now, like a burden has been lifted. I think I was trying to work out what's best-

Trying to control the outcome-

Yes, that's right, trying to work it all out, when it's impossible to-

Trying to be God.

Oh god, don't say that; but yes, I guess so. Argh, fancy that, eh, me trying to be God, trying to work out what's best for everyone... God help us... So, how does He - oh, I forget, it's now They - do it?

They?

Yes, hasn't she told you yet: God is apparently a Father and Mother to us, the same One Soul, but

expressing Two Personalities who we can relate to. They are Soulmates.

She has said something about 'They', but I wasn't paying attention and let it go. Oh well, why not? Anything's possible I guess. I've never thought about it - God has always just been a Him... and I like the idea of God also being a Her. Wow Doug, it's all incredible.

Yes, and exhausting, everything I thought and believed seems to be getting turned on its head. Thank God, Him and Her, that I've got some more days off. And then here I am with you in my life, and my god, that is the biggest miracle of all! And I still can't get over how it all just seems so natural, like we've always been together.

Yes, I know, I hardly dare think about it, it's too good to be true, and I'm sure when the honeymoon is over, it will all fall apart. I feel like in some ways I'm still holding my breath waiting for it to all end; and then again, I also feel so comfortable and relaxed, I've not felt so secure and happy in years - if at all in my life. It's all so new, I have to keep pinching myself to see if it is real and not just some dream I've got stuck in.

We should try and go to sleep, you'll be so tired tomorrow for work, with all that's been going on.

Yes probably, but I don't feel too bad, all things considered. I feel really good, and so happy being here with you and Sage. I'll be able to get through tomorrow, and with your help again, and Deb will be in too, and I've got a new trainee girl as well who's had some experience, so she'll be all right I won't have to tell her how to do everything. And I've decided to delay getting a new person in to replace Micky, and in fact I'm holding off reporting what happened to Micky - I don't know what to say. However I'll have to say something soon, because it's all changing from his end with the government, but that's only a minor problem, they can all be as dumbfounded as I am. And they'll be able to see Micky for themselves, and he is going to affect a lot of people.

Which brings up my worry again. What happens when word gets around about what Sage did; what happens if the whole world starts clamouring for a healing - what are we going to do: What is she going to do!? I mean Cath, this could be huge, bigger than huge; I mean - shit, I wish I stopped saying "I mean"; but I mean, I just can't understand what's going to happen. If she keeps helping people like this, surely everyone is going to want such help. And what is she going to do, play God herself, and say, yes to you, and no to you, or is she just going to heal them all... could she possibly do that, or is it just going to be potluck who gets helped. I don't know what to think about it, I feel demented even beginning to try and think it through, it's too much; I mean, what if-

I know and I agree Doug, and I don't try and think about it. Her potential could be enormous with such angel-power at her disposal. And how her 'friends' are talking, she being something so extraordinary, so... and the mind boggles to think. And it happened to effortlessly. Look what happened to Micky, we didn't hear a thing, nothing, they were in the gym room together, and next

thing we find them casually sitting in the music room, just like they've always been there that way; and it's no big deal, and what's all the fuss about, and Oh My God - it's a Bloody Miracle! The amazingness of it is astounding, I feel like running around screaming: IT'S A MIRACLE, IT'S A MIRACLE, EVERYONE, COME LOOK, A MIRACLE JUST HAPPENED, THIS BOY WAS RETARDED, HE COULDN'T DO ANYTHING FOR HIMSELF WITHOUT SOME FORM OF ASSISTANCE, AND NOW LOOK AT HIM - HE'S NORMAL, JUST A NORMAL TWELVE-YEAR-OLD BOY! Miracle, Miracle, it's a miracle! We didn't witness it taking place Doug, but we've seen the effects of it. My head spins with the amazingness, it's too good to be true, did it even happen, is it real, shit I feel like I want to keep rushing over the Micky's house just to see if he is still normal. I half expect his mother to bring him in again any day soon, just as was.

Yes I know, a miracle; I mean, how often does that sort of thing happen - never that I know of. I've heard of people going to Lourdes hoping for a miracle, and sometimes they happen, or so they say; I've never met anyone of course who's received one or known someone who has, however we're a long way from Lourdes out here in Australia. And so how incredibly special is it - is Sage; and she is here with us, we are with her, her of all people in the world; a young girl who herself can suddenly walk having been a cripple, and now she's healing others. It's too way out there, too far fetched, and yet the most incredible part for me is that it all just feels so natural. Like it's no big deal; and I know we keep saying this, but it's what I keep feeling. Like you go down the road and buy a loaf of bread, because you want something to eat. So you get healed, having been a cripple all your life, no big deal, she can walk now, she is normal, that's all, now she can walk down the road and buy her bread herself... but she's not normal, Sage is definitely not normal.

No, no she's not. And if you were to tell someone about it all, no one would believe you.

I know, but I ain't going to tell anyone. Ah, but I can't stop thinking about it: what if when she gets to school one day, there they are all lined up with their sick grandparents who can hardly walk and are in such pain with their arthritis, and all the rest of the family with any ache and pain and illness, along with their sick pets - even the goldfish that's suddenly started swimming on its side. What are we going to do - what is she going to do? I think I'd just run away; say sorry, it was all mistake, Tony didn't break his leg the other day after all, it was just very sore and Sage rubbed it better; sorry she came to the school; sorry for getting all your hopes up; sorry, sorry everyone, false alarm; come on Sage, let's get out of here and we'll find you a new school, and this time, if the idiot falls out of the tree, don't for God's sake heal his broken leg.

Keep going Doug, you're obviously wound up about it, perhaps you should try to keep speaking about all you feel; and long for the truth of those feelings.

Alright, I'll give it ago, because if you don't mind Cath, there is more I want to say. I must say too, that I have a resistance to speaking like this, I keep thinking that you won't want to hear it all,

all my worries and complaining, and you'll tell me to stop; and I don't want to do all the talking, I feel like I'll be the one doing it all and you're always listening to me, and I want our relationship to be equal.

No, I don't feel like that, and I like listening to what you're saying. It helps me work through things myself, things I might not have thought through, yet things that are definitely in the back of my mind. So don't worry about me Doug, I'll speak up if I have something I want to say, and I'll tell you if you're talking too much. So go on with what you were saying. And talk more about your resistance to talking about your bad feelings if more comes up.

Alright; so yes, I'm scared, really, that's the bad feeling I've just realised I'm feeling, and not only scared, but scared shitless that all these people are going to show up one day, and demand, yes, demand, that Sage heals them all. And then once that lot are all healed, then the next lot will come, and it will never end.

So what are you scared of the most?

I don't now... that they will demand she helps them; and if she says no, or even yes, to some, but not all, then the ones who didn't get help will hurt her, will hit her trying to force her to help them.

They will set upon her, beating her up - something like that you mean?

Yes, yes, like that, and I won't know how to stop them, I won't be able to defend her, I won't be able to stand up to them, there will be too many of them, and they will all set upon her trying to force her to do it, when she can't make it happen; and God won't do anything, so neither will the angels, and all the angry people will stone her to death or something, calling her a witch - god, I have no idea where all this is coming from, but something like that.

God, I've got a strong sharp pain here in my head, it just came as I was saying all that.

I'm terrified Cath, I feel like screaming with terror that that's going to happen... that it's actually happening, like I'm there, and the masses are pounding on the door yelling to get in, wanting her to heal them. And there are so many of them, and we're surrounded, and there is no escape, and it's all going to come to a head, and they will kill us; sort of like, well, if you are not going to help us, then fuck you, then you can't help anyone.

Ow, my head is really bad, right down through my right eye, I feel like it's splitting in half.

I think it's good, all you're saying Doug.

But it all sounds mad, that's all sort of like what you might think could happen in the olden days, like on some movie to do with Jesus or something - that's how it feels saying it all. But we live in civilised Australia, I can't relate to it at all.

Do you still feel scared? It's only the feelings you need to relate to and express, don't worry about if any of it makes any sense.

Yeah, scared that they will all be angry with me because I'll be trying to get them to go away, and they will hit me and yell at me, and tell me that I'm a mean and nasty unloving, uncaring person, because I'm not letting them get healed.

Oh god Cath, now that reminds me of mum screaming at me, all those words I just used, almost as if she is the people, and she is screaming at me that I'm so selfish, uncaring and unloving. I can remember her going off the rails like that at me at different times. I can't remember what she was so upset about, but I always thought I must have done something really bad deserving her tirade; yet strangely now I don't feel that way, and yet that's the way I've always felt when I've remembers such times. Now I feel like she is the bad one, not me, that I didn't do anything that warranted such abuse from her - and yeah, abuse, shit, I have never looked at in this light before. But she abused me - child abuse. Ha! Fancy that; but yes, that's how I feel it, so hurt by her being so unloving. She was abusing me, yelling at me how selfish and unloving I was, and yet who was the one being selfish and unloving, I ask you - IT'S HER, not me! She's the one abusing me, I'm not abusing her; so she can go get fucked, and fuck off, and stop yelling at me.

So shit Cath, what if all those times when I thought I must have deserved what I got, that I must have done so many bad things, that I was a horrible child, a little devil, like you hear them call kids, I didn't actually do anything wrong - that it was her that was in the wrong by yelling at me.

It's not being a loving parent yelling at your child, no matter what it might have done.

That's right, it's not, is it! My pain is easing off... and that's remarkable; yes, I can see it clearly, it's as if something fundamentally has shifted and changed within me. I suddenly feel like I'm on my side, standing up for myself instead of just being subjected to her abuse all the time.

Oh wow Cath, that changes everything. I've never seen my relationship with mum in that light before. And when she was dying, I was telling her how much I was sorry for being such a trial as a boy, I was remembering all the times she was yelling at me like that, screaming at me for being so wicked and uncaring and not thinking about what I was doing. Yes, I was the bad one, it was all my fault, and she was the good one; and so there I was asking her for forgiveness, which she gave me, and I felt like a heavy weight of guilt had lifted. And yet now I feel like that's all shit, now I want to say to her: You mean old hag, it was you who was the unloving one, not me, the child. You're the horrible one, not me, you're the one who abused me, I didn't do anything bad to you, and you treated me like shit.

Shit Cath, I feel so angry, so fucking angry with her, I want to scream at her, scream at her as much as she screamed at me; I want to scream all those screams back at her, to scream then down her throat, I DON'T WANT THEM, it wasn't fair, I didn't deserve them; she took advantage of me by taking all her shit out on me, she was the mean and evil one, not me! NOT ME, NOT ME, IT WASN'T ME, IT WAS HER! God Cath, the rage in me, I'm sorry for going on-

No Doug, don't be sorry, that's just more of the same of what you've been saying, that you are bad for going on, but you're not; it's good that you are, it's right, so keep going, it's not affecting or hurting me what you're saying, and I love listening; as I've told you, this is exactly what I want in our relationship, for us both to get into the hidden depths of ourselves, this is really getting to know each other, and who knows what we might find.

Yeah, well this sure is a complete surprise. Fuck me, there might be something in what Sage says about this feeling thing after all. I mean Cath, I can't tell you how different I feel. I feel like I've turned around one hundred percent. I am no longer that boy; that boy who just took it all. No, now I am giving it back to her, I don't want it, she can have it, and as it wasn't fair of her to abuse me and treat me like that; so I don't want her... I hate her Cath!

Oh fuck me, I hate her, what have said... Oh my god, now that's really done it. OK, I give in, break the fucking door down, I've had it, I said the worst word you can say, I said "hate", and even that I hate her, my mother. Now I'm done for, that's the end of it, she will never speak to me... and then again, well thank god for that, I hope she never does speak to me again, because then I won't get all that screaming abuse yelled at me. So yeah, fuck her and fuck it all; I don't want her, I hate her, I don't want her in my life if that's how she's going to treat me... But ah no, now I feel scared again, shit, where are all these feelings and emotions coming up from... Ah shit, I feel like I'm going to be sick, I want to throw up, ah fuck I have to go to the toilet... sorry Cath... ah fuck I feel bad... no... no... it's passing, ah shit, what is happening to me, I'm losing it, I don't know what's happening or what to say, I feel almost faint, all over the place - but shit that was amazing, wasn't it Cath?

Have a moment to gather yourself Doug, it's all right, take a few deep breaths, and see if there is anymore you feel.

Yeah, all right: How do I feel now? Shaky, still a bit sick... yet, I'm more relaxed now. And I have changed; I can feel and just know I have, I am no longer Doug of a few moments ago, I am a new Doug... I hope you still like me Cath. I mean, it's not right to not love your parents, is it? I mean, everyone loves them, that's the biggest thing, and I felt so sad when they both died. I felt I loved them, that we all loved each other; and yet, how can you love someone when you are screaming at them? And what's more: How can you love someone who's screaming at you!? And I remember her screaming at me... ah, I don't know, it's all a bit confusing.

I think it's not what we think, which is what Sage is helping us to see. What is love? I too agree with what you're saying about loving our parents, for that's how it was for me, too. I loved them, still do, but there are many times I feel so angry with them; and then I think, do I really love them - how can I love them when I'm so angry with them? But then I think, but that's how relationships are, we all love and hate each other, we all have times when we get angry and upset with each other, but then they pass and we're back loving each other... However, as I've got older... oh I don't know, things have been changing in me, too, and I've started questioning love and my relationship with them more. As they get older, and I too, less and less do I feel I want to

see them, and then I feel guilty and force myself to visit them, and they are always so happy to see me; but then I feel bad because I'm being false with them, having to put on more and more of an effort to disguise my growing feelings of not wanting to see them; and then I worry that they will see through me and feel hurt, and I don't want to make them feel bad now they are so old. It's hard enough getting old, and all they are having to go through as it is... yet, who am I to support - myself, or them? Am I to look after myself and honour my true feelings; or should I not be so selfish and look after them, as they surely won't be around for much longer? And yet, am I being selfish by wanting to put myself first - it is my life after all; and am I going to owe them for having me, right the way through until they die, when I didn't ask them to have me?

See, you too feel like you're being selfish if you don't do what they want... I think we've all got that.

Yes, maybe your right. But it's so hard, and I don't think I can leave them, not now; so I might have to just pretend I like seeing them, and see it through to the end.

Well, I'll support you Cath, no matter which way you want to go.

Thank you Doug, it's so good to be able to talk about these things, to have a friend who will listen to you.

So I take it you've told them about us...

Oh yes, I phoned mum, but I don't think she really understands - she said she'd like to meet you. So maybe one weekend we can drive out there, it's quite a way, but a lovely drive. And I'd like Sage to come too, if she wants... but just then I felt another odd feeling...

Yeah, what?

Well, that actually, I have to admit that I'm a bit hesitant in wanting Sage to come... now, why should that be? It's that I think I'm worried that I'm going to be putting pressure on her, as in she will feel she will have to do something to help mum and dad, because they are both in quite a bad way in different ways; and I'd not want Sage to think that she has to help them or anything like that.

She can't help anyone herself - you know that, it's not up to her, so I wouldn't worry about it; and if something were to happen, it will. And ah no, now I feel scared of taking her anywhere: what if she keeps helping people everywhere she goes; and you can't go anywhere without seeing someone who needs the sort of help Sage could give.

Yes, but I wouldn't want to put that kind of pressure on her, even if she knows she can't help them, or it's not right to, or however it works-

Why don't you ask her, talk with her about it? And should you talk more about your bad feelings - sorry, I cut you off again?

Yes, I will. I still feel there's something else; something I've not quite put my finger on... now what is it...wait, please Doug, if you don't mind, don't say anything, as I think I'll lose it... I almost had it...yes, yes that might be it. You see, when I was very young there was a sick dog next door and it was howling day and night, and it was the most awful noise you could imagine. And I wanted someone to help it, and why didn't anyone help it, why did they all just leave it in such agony. It was dreadful, the noise of it crying and whimpering, day and night; I would cry myself to sleep over it, and mum and dad said we mustn't do anything to interfere as it wasn't our business. But it was so sad, and all I wanted to do was go over there and hold it and make its pain go away. I'd have given anything to be like Sage; and yes, I know it's not her that chooses who is healed, but to have such powers and to be able to help people, it's all I've wanted to do all my life, as I can't bear the suffering, I can't bear seeing anyone in pain.

And you know, just saying that, and I've been longing for the truth of these feelings to come up so I can see what's really going on inside me, it makes me think that that is why I don't want to go and see mum and dad so much, because I can't bear seeing them in pain. And it's not that I can't bear seeing them in pain actually, but now I can see it's that I can't do anything to ease it, I am helpless in it, just like how I was and felt about that dog next door.

And I can also see that it's different with the kids I look after at the clinic, because they are not really in any pain, or not that anyone can tell. They just have difficulties, and for the most part seem relatively pain-free. I guess they must be in some pain, but as they can't really tell us, and as we're limited in what we can see, I don't feel as helpless with them, so I guess they don't trigger my fear and trauma of that time all those years ago.

Oh it was so awful Doug, you've no idea, I used to lie in bed praying to God to please make it stop, to please help the dog, even to make it die; and I'd even ask the angels to help, I'd ask everyone and anyone I could think of, but nothing happened.

What happened to the dog?

I don't know, dad said that he'd had a word with the neighbour and suddenly all was quiet; and the relief, it was like a magic wand has been waved, and there was silence, blissful silence, no more pain. I guess they killed it, it had some disease that the vet couldn't treat, and they were giving it pills hoping it might come good. It was their beloved family pet and they couldn't bear the thought of it dying, and so I guess that's how they managed to bear all those terrible noises. But it was too much for me, I was so distraught, I couldn't think, I'd worry all day when we went out, dreading having to come home and hear it crying out. I think it went on for about a week, but it seemed eternity, and I can hear it now, and I want to cry. I want cry for it Doug, for it having to feel so bad, and for no one being able to do anything for it. I don't think its owners were bad people, but really they should have put it out of its misery long before they did - that's what I think anyway. But then you do hear of animals making amazing recoveries if they are left to it;

but I don't know, how long should you wait, it's all so hard, and what if they acted too hastily, and put it to death only later somehow to find out that it would have got better by itself, and you killed it unnecessarily. These are all such difficult questions, and who knows the answer, and if only we all had the higher or inner connections Sage looks to, then things might be easier to deal with. But I know life is not like that, and we all have to do our best and try and do what we think is right, but it's all so hard; and the suffering I went through, I don't think anyone ever knew. I suffered I think as much as that dog did. It was me who was sick, I wanted to die, to end the pain, to stop the noise, it was just too horrible. I think it was about one of the worst things I've ever experienced.

Yeah, it sounds awful.

It was Doug, you have no idea, and I've never told anyone, not mum or dad; for how could I, I wasn't even aware enough of myself back then. I was too young, it was as if the dog's sad cries were becoming part of me, and I only have to think of it and all it must have suffered, and all I suffered, and I want to cry, to cry and cry forever, to cry for it and for myself, for all we went through together. I do hope there is a nice loving pain-free afterlife for the animals and all creatures, it would be too dreadful to think that they just suffer like that and no one cares about them when they are gone.

But I feel a bit better now Doug, having spoken about it, it is always good when you can get things off your chest, and now realising that so many of the things from all our childhoods we've still got buried within us, still there waiting to come out, still needing to be properly paid attention to. And I think I will have more to say and feel about that bad time in my life. I can feel there's more pain down inside me, which I'll have to work on to bring up.

However, I don't think I can do anymore now, it would be too distressing for me having to deal with more just now, that too I can feel; so I guess it will take time, a bit coming up here and there, and that's probably a good thing, it not all coming up at once, because how would we be able to cope with it all, and who knows how much pain we've all got buried inside us.

And I don't want to hear that dog crying all the time. It takes nothing for me to tune back into the past, to be me, little again, and in my bed feeling so bad. I just wish I could have loved it, told it somehow that it's all right, and that even though it might be hurting so much, that someone - that I, love it. That's what I really wanted to say Doug; you know, as if by telling it that I loved it, that somehow the power of my love for it would make it be all right. And I guess I still believe that, that if I love my kids enough, then I am in my small way telling and showing them that I love them, and they will somehow feel it, and know it, and that will help them.

Yes, that's what it's all about, love; and wanting to love, to be able to give love, and then also wanting to be loved in return - and being able to receive that love.

Do you think your kids love you?

Yes, yes, I do. Sometimes there are these special moments, they are hard to explain, but every now and again, and suddenly out the blue, when it's least expected, not that I am expecting such

things, but something will happen, it's almost as if a gap opens between us, like a connecting bridge, and for a split second, we can feel how much we love each other, and then it's gone. It's those special moments with them that keeps me going. Because I feel we are connecting in other more subtle ways; I would love Sage to come and work with me with them, so I can see if what I think is right, she might be able to ask her spirit friends or the angels what is happening in those special moments.

I'm sure she'd be happy to.

Yes, but there is that same bad feeling again, I don't want to take advantage of her, I don't want her to do things for me like that because it might be too taxing for her; or something, I don't know what, but I just feel I don't want to interfere with her, I don't want to put suggestions into her head.

I don't think you have anything to worry about there; and Cath, I think it's best if you say to her, all you are saying to me, just ask her, she's more than capable of saying no or helping you to understand such things. As you know, the best thing is to be as open with her as we can, even if it's all our shit we're putting on her - which makes me feel bad. But I can't see there is any way around it; and how are we meant to know what she might or might not like, when we've not got the magical all-seeing all-knowing power, she has.

Yes, of course Doug, you are right, the more openly I am expressing my worries and doubts, the better; as she, after all, is the one encouraging us to be like this. So yes, I will ask her, and I guess there's no harm in asking, is there?

No, I don't see why not; and as I said, she's more than capable of saying no. And I know her 'helpers' are not going to allow her to be subjected to something she can't or is not meant to deal with. I've been asking some questions feeling her out about such things like that, and they are very quick to jump in saying no. It seems there are strict boundaries or guidelines to which she and they are adhering to, and although I don't think Sage knows them all, the others certainly do.

Yes, and again it's so hard not wanting to step in and control it all, to have it be how you think it should be. And yet we have no right to know what is best for Sage, or my parents, or my kids, or anyone else. But it's so hard to let go and just allow it all to happen, because as you say, what if it all turns out wrong and somehow goes bad.

I think we're full of worries that will be proved unfounded, that's what I hope-

Yes, but we can't just make them go away, we're both full of them, look at what we've been talking about, we've hardly stopped. So we will just have to keep dealing with them, which is why I suppose Sage has been so insistent on us paying attention to all our feelings, and especially our bad ones. God, that girl is incredible, it's like she's always miles ahead, knowing exactly what's

right and best for everyone.

I know, she is amazing, and I have a feeling that won't be the last time I'll be saying that word.

I know what you mean; where could it all go too, what do they have in store for us - for Sage? If I dare to let my mind go, there is no end, she could do wonders, wonders beyond what anyone has ever seen; even more than Jesus did, she's already done more than he did in her way because she's only just thirteen, he was a grown man knowing what it was all about.

Yep, it's staggering to think of the possibilities. What will the religious people think when she pops up and she's not of any religion, their monopoly on such miracles will look a bit lame; and then the medical people, they might not like it, bad for business; and then those people who aren't healed, for surely she can't heal everyone, and then what does she do? Does she say, I will heal everyone up until this day, but then after that, sorry, I can't do it anymore, and you're all back to how it was before I showed up? Or does she just keep healing people right the way through her life, touring the world helping certain people, just being a 'Living Wonder'. I wish I knew what they've got in mind for her, but they won't let on. I've tried questioning them through her but they just keep saying wait and see. So that's all I can do, holding my breath every time we go out, waiting until I finally lose it and freak out altogether.

And then I just thought, god I hope I don't get to the point of dreading going out; oh god, then what would I do? I would have leave her, saying, no more, I'm sorry Sage, I've failed you, I can't stand the torment of worry of what's going to happen next. Oh Cath, I think I'm in a very bad way: How will I be able to go back to work and carry on as if nothing has happened? I'm no longer that same Doug, I've gone too far... I don't know where to - but too far away.

Why do you have to go back, you can come and help me, work for me full time?

Could I?

Yes, I think I could wangle it. I don't really need anyone else, but there's funds for a janitor sort of person, like a male nurse, and he can be unskilled. So I can sign you up as him, but all you'd have to do is whatever you want to do - how does that sound?

Fantastic! My job at the factory is a dead end anyway; as you know, I can't get into a higher managerial position. And up until now it's suited me to have such a stable place I can go to and robotically work, because I had to give so much attention to Sage. But now that I'm free of that job looking after her, so it occurred to me this morning, although I've not given it any serious attention, that I could look for a better more challenging job. But what you've now said Cath, I'd love to sweep the floors and clean the toilets; and I'm serious, I mean it - do whatever you need me to do, all so long as I can be closer to you.

Great! Then I'll see if I can sort it out.

Fan-bloody-tastic, as Tommy at Sage's school says. To think, I don't have to go back to work - as soon as you know, I'll ring them. And I don't feel bad, they've had their pound of flesh out of me over the years; and Danny wants my job, and he'd be good at it, so I wouldn't be leaving them in the lurch. Yes, that would be great! FAN-BLOODY-TASTIC. Big Kiss for you my dear!

Hi Tommy-

Sage, you're still the talk of the town over what you did for Tony the other day.

Why, what are people saying?

They are saying all sorts of things, like you are a Gift from God, like you're an angel, like you're a saint - all that sort of thing.

And what do you think Tommy?

I think you're the best looking girl in the school, and I've been telling everyone I've asked you to be my girlfriend, and you've said - YES!

Ha, you're funny Tommy. And how is Tony handling all the attention?

Great, it's the best thing that's ever happened to him. He'll be here shortly, he had to go and tell his story to a few more people, they wanted to see him before school, he's never been so popular. Half of them think he's just making it up, showing off like he does, because they say, show us your leg then, but there's nothing to see. And they can't believe that he fell and hurt himself so badly, and there's not even a scar or a bruise; but then it wasn't just him there, was it, there was the lot of us, and we all heard and saw that he'd badly hurt himself. And then we all saw what you did, and how he got up and walked, so these people have to believe. Can you do that with everyone?

What?

Fix their bones if they break.

I don't know. Tony is the first person I've done it with.

Oh.

Yes, it's all new to me, too.

So if I broke my leg, would you fix it?

I don't know, it's not up to me. I don't do it, God does it; God tells the angels, and they do it.

Angels - what angels? You keep talking about angels, but I didn't see any angels - no one saw any angels.

You can't see them Tommy, but I can. And they fixed Tony's leg through me.

Yeah, how?

They all come around and there is a lot of light, and so much so that I can't actually see what they do. And the light is mostly white, but then there are all colours too. And there is light tuning off and on and getting brighter and dimmer and all shimmering, and really it's a symphony of colour and light; and there is music too, that's how I can describe it, like a sound, a lovely song, sort of, but not like a tune you could sing. And I can hear it, and it sounds like the angels are all singing, and the light is shining and spinning around and dancing all over the place; and there is such movement, but I can't quite make out what is happening; and I feel the heat in my hands, and energy and light going into them and out of them and up me and out up my head and down me, down my arms and into Tony's leg; and then before I know it, it's all over, he is fixed, and they all leave, and the music stops, and the light stops dancing... and that's how it happens.

WOW! And you can see all of that - how?

I see it in my mind, sort of. I don't know how. I can see into spirit, so I can see spirits who might be with us, and angels at times, although not all the time with them. Like now, you've got an old man with a very long beard standing there just behind you Tommy. He says his name is Allen, grand-

He's me grandpa! Grandpa Allen; yes, he died a few years ago.

Yes, well he's standing there with you telling me to tell you that he is looking after you through your life, Tommy; that he always loved you, and wants to see that you do well; and so when you need a bit of help, if he can give it to you, he does.

You're making me cry Sage. I loved him, too, and I miss him so much; he was the only one who would listen and talk to me and tell me things about things.

Yes, well he says that you've nothing to worry about, as he'll be with you right through your life, and when your time comes to die and move on into the afterlife, he'll be there to meet you Tommy. He'll have everything sorted for you, and he'll show you around and see to it that you settle in.

Oh gee, can you tell him that I love him and to thank him, that sounds so good.

He can hear your thoughts Tommy, he can read your mind, so he's heard what you said.

Really!

Yes, and he says that's enough for now, he's going to have a cup of coffee and a cigar, he's taken quite a fancy to smoking them in spirit, as they are free of charge to obtain, and they can't cause lung cancer, which he died from. Because he's already dead - he's laughing at his joke.

Yes, the doctor said it was too many cigarettes.

He's still laughing, saying, Blah, what would doctors know!

YES, YES SAGE, THAT'S WHAT HE ALWAYS SAID; IT'S HIM, IT'S REALLY HIM, AND YOU'RE TALKING TO HIM, JUST LIKE HE'S HERE WITH ME AGAIN - god I wish I could see him too...

Hey Sage, would you like to come over to my place after school and I can show you my fish, I've got them in a pond in the garden, you know, goldfish; dad and me dug it out and we put a special liner in it so the water wouldn't all sink into the ground, and now they're all swimming around.

Yes I would Tommy, I'll ask Doug if I can.

GREAT! And I'll be able to tell you their names.

*

So Sage, the masses weren't lined up this morning either, that was a huge relief.

Nothing like that Doug is doing to happen.

And thank God for that! Every day I keep thinking, this is it, this will be the day they'll all come... and thank you Sisters - Esmerelda; even you too, Mother and Father God. And I've called Tommy's parents, so I'll take you round there and go and do some shopping and pick up Cath - is that all right with you?

Yes.

*

That big golden one, he's my favourite Sage, and I've named him Tommy - after myself of course. And that big fat yellowy one, he's called Tony, even though Tony's not fat; and this lovely black one, she's new Sage, I only got her the other day; and although she's hard to see, I like that, and she reminds me of you, so I've called her Sage.

Do you feed them Tommy?

Yes, every morning I give them some fish food pellets; and if I've got time after school, I might try and dig a couple of worms in the compost heap and find a few beetles, they love sucking at those golden ones that come into those trees sometimes. I don't like to kill the beetles, as I think they are grouse, so only if I find some dead ones. But worms I don't mind throwing in, we use them going fishing sometimes.

Would you like a pond like this one Sage, maybe me and my dad could build one for you, and then you can have fish too?

No, thank you Tommy. I don't want any pets, I used too, but now I don't. I won't have time to look after them properly-

Why not, what will you be doing?

Work.

What sort of work?

Working with the angels.

I see. Like doing what you did with Tony?

I don't know, but stuff; there is so much for me to learn about, and I've got a short time to learn it in, and so most of the time I'm speaking with the angels or the spirits I can talk with.

And all in your head, like you spoke to Grandpa?

Yes, but for me it's easy because I can see them so easily, so it's as if they are real people and I'm talking with them, only you and most other people can't see them. And we have a lot to talk about, I don't know a lot of things, so there is a lot of things they have to tell me about.

What like?

Well, how I can help people in different ways. For example, how I helped you with your Grandpa, I'd not done that before. So that was new for me, and so I need to understand stuff about it. Like who can I talk to; can I talk with everyone's spirit guides, as that's what your Grandpa is for you Tommy, someone in spirit who wants to help you with your life. And then, what sort of help can they do with you from spirit?

How does he help me?

They've told me that spirits like himself can sort of exert a pressure on your mind; for example, let's say you were going to do a bad thing, like hurt someone, say for some reason, hurt one of

your fish-

I'd never hurt them-

No you wouldn't, but just for an example; so it was a bad thing you were going to do, then Grandpa might be able to impress thoughts on you, making you feel that it wasn't right for you to do whatever it was you were going to do. And so you might not do it, and that might help you to see that what you were going to do, was wrong.

Yeah? Grandpa would help me like that?

Yes, that's what I understand - one example.

And you say you can see him? Can you see him now, is he standing next me now how he was this morning?

No, he's over there sitting on that garden seat. He says that he doesn't always have to be that close, or even with you Tommy, for he knows pretty much what you're up to; and if he is needed, then he will know and come closer. He's only here with us now over there because he knows we're talking about him. So he's listening to what we say. And he says you'd better not tell your mother or father because they'll think your nuts - talking with your dead Grandpa out by the fish pond. He says it would probably be a good idea if you keep it a secret between the three of us.

All right, I will. Thanks Grandpa, I like the idea of that. I won't tell a soul, just you and me will know Sage. And-

Please... sorry Tommy, but there's someone else here who wants to speak to me; do you mind if I speak with them? Let's sit on this seat.

No Sage, I don't mind, not at all - who's here, not Grandma I hope?

No, it's not her; no, it's someone else... it's a nature spirit Tommy, do you know what that is?

Nup.

It's like a little fairy, but really it's more like a small angel. Look, they are coming over from that dark corner, there by those ferns. I'll tell you what they say.

Okay... what do they look like?

The leader is about half a metre high, they are all small, and he's got red shoes on with pointy toes and he's wearing a red cap with bright blue pants, shirt and coat; he's got black eyes; no,

they've just changed to bright yellow... now red, to match his cap and shoes... and there's about ten of them, boys and girls, and now they are all standing as a group on the middle of your pond.

On top of the water!

Yes.

Wow. And what do they want?

The leader wants to speak to you Tommy.

He does; what does he want to say?

He wants to meet you, he says his name is Omallow, and he's been appointed keeper of your pond. He says he looks after all the plants and animals, and all the tiniest creatures, in your garden and in the water, and he will especially look after your new fish. He says it's a lovely thing you've done for the garden Tommy, that all the birds and insects will benefit from it, they will be able to drink when it's hot and bathe to keep cool. He says that he and his gang, although you can't see them, can see you, and if you think of them your thoughts, then they will receive them; so have a go, he's saying think something to him Tommy...

He says that's a good thought Tommy, and what it means is that when all the leaves of this tree, here, this one with the big green leaves, fall off and into the water, it would be wise to scoop out most of the leaves; because if they rot, and there is not enough new water added to the pool, sickness can build up hurting your fish. And that it's nothing to worry about if a few leaves fall into the pond, but just not all of them, especially as the tree gets bigger.

Now he says, you could cut it down, but that would be a shame, wouldn't it Tommy, because you love that tree, and you planted it with your dad; and even though you love your fish more, so would cut it down to save them from getting sick; no, you don't have to go that far, just to take as many of the leaves out of the pond as you can when they fall off in autumn. And not to be too worried, it's not like every last leaf has to be scooped out, but just as many as you can be bothered with, and that will be enough. You can tape a net to that boom handle over there, and with your net just scoop a few out each morning and afternoon when you feed your fish.

Alright, I can do that. That's great that I don't have to cut the tree down; I do love it, me and me dad planted it - the first one! What's his name again Sage?

Omallow.

What kind of name is that?

It's an old ancient name from the Old Country - that's what he says.

What are they doing now Sage?

They are sitting on the surface of the pond looking at us.

So are they fairies? I thought fairies weren't real, just make-believe.

Yes we are real, only not as most people think of us - that's what Omallow is saying. He says, they are not quite angels, but when they 'die', or cease being a nature spirit, they move onto becoming angels. They are the custodians of life on earth, they care for the planet on the spiritual or etheric level, making sure all the creatures and plants get the correct energy and light they need to keep living. And they try and limit the negative influences of man on nature, although they are not allowed to directly interfere with people, so mostly they just have watch and feel sad about all the unloving and unkind things people do to the creatures and plants. And they are very pleased Tommy that you have in this very small way, made a loving place for your fish to live, and all the other creatures and plants that will benefit from it.

I love all the creatures and plants Omallow; I want to do work to help nature when I grow up.

Yes we know Tommy, and we, that is, wherever you go, there will be those of our kind who will be willing to help you from our side in whatever you want to do. And the more you can help nature, the better you will feel, and the more you will enjoy and be happy in life. You Tommy are to have a life with nature, you feel close to it, you want to be with it, and even be part of it, and for this we love you Tommy.

Yes, that's what I want to do; and that's what I feel Omallow. Yes, yes, that's what I want to do, look after the creatures, to make things so they will be happy and safe and not feel scared and be hurt. So I will scoop out the leaves as you said, that will help the fish, and that's what I want.

They say they are going now Tommy; they say when you are out here with the fish they will come and be with you. You don't have to do anything with them, just think to them, and they will hear; just think nice thoughts about them, and it doesn't even matter if you don't think about them, because it's hard to remember them when you can't see them, yet they will still be with you, as some of their kind, as with your Grandpa, are always going to be with you; they will always be with you in the work that you do with nature and helping creatures, as you will do Tommy, because that is what God wants you to do.

They are waving goodbye Tommy-

Goodbye! Wow Sage, that was great. Wow, without you saying all that I'd have never known they were there.

I know Tommy, there are so many things that people don't know about because they can't see into the spirit worlds and spirit planes around earth, and people miss out on so much.

I wish I could see them like you can Sage; I wish I could speak with them like you can. Wow, that would be neat; and I'd not tell anyone - that really would be me own secret. Can't you make me see them Sage?

No Tommy, I'm sorry, I can't do things like that.

Too bad, that would have been grouse. I'd have liked that so much, just think how much they could tell me about everything, the garden and about nature, like that about that tree, and it's leaves, and too many of them making the fish get sick. I'd have never known that, and they might have got sick, and I'd never have known why.

Yes, there is so much that we don't know. So that's why I can't have pets, because I've got all these other things I need to think about and do, so as to help people like you Tommy understand that there is something more, something unseen, and something that could help and be good for people to understand about.

But if only you can see then and talk to them; you're only one person Sage, you're not going to be able to do much.

I know. There are others like me now, and although they might not be able to do it as easily as I can, still, others who can are going to come in future. I've been told that Tommy; and also that one day you'll met a nice woman whom you will marry; and she will remind you of me, as she too will be able to see the nature spirits: the Little People of Light, like I can; and she will be able to talk to them too, and you'll both do lots of good work together and love each other dearly Tommy. You see, you don't have to worry about it, because it's going to happen, not now, but when you're older, when you're ready. And she will come into your life in a rush, and so unexpectedly taking you completely by surprise; and she will have long thick wavy red hair and bright green emerald eyes, and she will have a wild spirit Tommy; but you'll be a match for her, you'll settle her down because you will accept her and understand her and allow her to be as she wants to be; free, free to be with and in nature; and you'll live in the country by a lovely river; and you'll grow things and look after the land you live on; and people will come, and you and she will help them to grow things and understand about all the creatures - and how to look after them, and how to appreciate them; and you will have five children Tommy; and two of your little girls will also have long red flowing hair like their mother, and they too will be able to See, like I can, Tommy; and they will See even better than their mother; and you will know how to be a good father to them, how to keep their secrets of Seeing safe until it's time for them to be women in their own right; and they will go off into the world and do wonderful things Tommy; and you will be very proud of them, as will you be very proud of your other children who each in their own ways will be able to work wonders with nature; the others might not be able to see or hear the spirits, like I can, but like you Tommy, they will have a good feeling for it, an intuitive sense and ability, and they will also do good things to help nature.

WOW Sage, that all just come to you now?

Yes. I've your angel here with us now Tommy, he's telling me to tell you this, saying that you need to know it now Tommy, to keep it safe as a secret within you; and when the time comes, when you meet your woman with the red flaming hair and emerald green eyes, you will know she is the one you are to be with. She will need your earthiness Tommy; she will be flighty, her spirit full of the wind, and you will be the earth Tommy, solid as a rock, stable, around which she will whirl.

You're giving me goose bumps Sage. Wow, you're incredible Sage. So aren't I going to be with you?

For now you will be Tommy, like this, and I will tell you more about your future to help you remember what I've just said, but in time we will part going our separate ways. You'll have other women you'll need to be with Tommy, a whole series of them, because you'll need them to teach you about women and feelings, all so you can be with your chosen one for this life - the woman with the red-flaming hair. I'm just the beginning for you Tommy; you'll see, it will all work out for you; and you just be as you are, that's all you have to do.

Hello Sage!

Hello Micky - how are you?

Good, I'm very good, never been better, all thanks to you. Mum and dad want to talk to you, if that's all right with you, and when you're finished with them, come to my room, I've got some music I want you to listen to.

Alright Micky.

Yes Sage, if you wouldn't mind, and you too Doug, please, come in... would you like something to eat and drink; Don and I want to ask you some questions, if that's all right?

Yes Margaret, is everything all right, I mean with Micky?

Oh yes Doug, everything is fine, in fact everything is so good, and that's partly what we want to talk with you both about.

Yes, Doug and Sage; first of all we want to thank you Sage from the bottom of our hearts. And as we told Cathy, we want to be able to help you Sage if we can; we don't know how, but if you need anything, please ask us. If you want money, we'd like to give you some. Cathy said that you don't want anything, that she spoke to you, and we understand; it is difficult, but still we'd like to give you something, and so if you ever need anything, please think of us.

Thank you Don, but no, I don't want anything. It's not me doing what I did, God wanted it done. I am just a conduit, or vehicle, to do what God wants.

Yes, we understand that too, Cathy told us; and you're not religious at all?

No, one doesn't need to be to love God and to do what God wants.

Well, now that we've talked about that Sage, really it is us needing your help again, and we don't really know how to ask it of you; the last thing is we want to ask you for anything, but we feel we have to, so we're sorry if you feel we are asking you for something you can't give. You see, we don't really know what the problem is, but it does concern Micky. He says he doesn't want to go to school, that there is no need for him to go, as Cathy taught him everything he needs to know - but how could that be when he was as he was?

Don and I don't understand him half the time. Oh, don't get me wrong, it's simply the most wonderful thing to have happened to him and our family, the relief is so great, and the pleasure of having him around being able to talk to him and he to us, oh you can't begin to know what that feels like for us... but still, what he says perplexes us half the time, almost as if he's speaking another language, so we don't really know what to do. And we don't want to be hard on him, we

don't want to make him do anything he doesn't want to do, but he's still young and he needs to meet other people his own age and have friends and be a normal boy, do normal boy things, get involved in sports, you know.

Margaret and Don, I understand what your problem is, and I will try to help you. He's what I will say, and this is not coming from me, I'm not making this up; this is from Micky's guardian angel. Are you okay with that, can you accept that - do you want to hear what he has to say?

Yes, you speak just like Micky; yes Sage, we don't understand, but we don't understand anything, it's been all too much for us, we've not seen any of our friends, for how can we tell then what's happened, what will they think; so what shall we do, yes, please Sage, continue.

Micky is *not* normal, you both will have to accept this. He hasn't been normal from the start, so nothing about his life or himself will be normal. So it will be of no use to him or you to try and force him into being normal - he is not going to have a normal life.

So if you can both accept this, you will not feel bad, and will be able to let him be free to do what he wants to do. He is going to do lots of wonderful things with music, to help people through music, music is his thing. And all he learnt from Cathy is all he needs to know so far as what he would learn at school - normal school would be a waste of time for him. It would be wise to therefore find new avenues for him to progress in his schooling with music, he will tell you what he would like, and such places and opportunities are currently available in Melbourne.

And you don't have to worry about him not having friends, he will meet lots of people and have lots of friends, all through and do with his music. He will be heralded in the end as a genius, because he is going to produce music that is of the angels, it will be healing music from which a lot of people will benefit.

And Margaret, you do not need to worry about his wellbeing, it will be taken of; and nor do you have to worry about his meeting a wife, because he will have three. His first wife will leave him for another man; with this pain he will experience moving deeper into his feelings, and so deeper into his musical understanding; his second wife will quickly die from illness, this also causing him pain from which he will move even deeper still. But his third wife will give him lots of happiness, and give you three lovely grandchildren.

So you can see, we are telling you this because his life will be a rocky one, but these things are needed because his best music and work will result when he is happily married, with what he has gone through, including his time up until now, all being part of the experiences he will need to produce that music.

However we caution you to keep what we are saying now to yourselves. You can tell him if you like, as it will have no effect on him, however for your own peace of mind, what I have told you will help you accept such things when they happen, helping you to give him the support he will need.

He loves you both more than you can imagine, and even though at times he might seem remote and removed, that is just the nature of his soul. But it doesn't mean he loves you any less. He will spend time away overseas and so will not see you that often, but that is also how it is

meant to be. So you have no need to worry about him, he will be looked after, as are you all.

Do you have any questions you'd like to ask me before I go?

I do, if you don't mind. So are we to not worry about putting him into a school, and instead send him to the music Conservatorium like he wants?

Yes, that would be wise. Normal school would only retard him and make him unhappy. There is an older Jewish man at the Conservatorium who is very knowledgeable about music and is able to understand more unorthodox talent, and he will know how to get the best from Micky. He will challenge him, he will not dismiss his talents as being too unorthodox, and he will ensure that Micky receives all the help that he needs.

Look, whoever you are, thank you so much, that is wonderful, and my mind feels much more settled. Thank you; and thank you Sage. I think Don and I just needed the support and encouragement to do what you are saying because it's all so different for us, our other children are not like Micky, so we are not used to him.

So, thank you again, thank you so much, and we will keep what you have said about him to ourselves. And you are right, we've been recommended to take Micky to be interviewed by a man we understand to be an older Jewish man at the Conservatorium for music. Micky has been creating things for him to listen to on the piano... he can play it... how did he learn to do it?

Thank you, thank you... thank you.

*

See, listen to this Sage, what do you think it's saying, I made it just now on the piano...

Beautiful Micky, it's the first Song of Light sung by the Angels, isn't it?

Yes. I can hear it in my mind, they play it to me, it's not right yet, it needs more work, but I'll get there, I want to Sage, it's the only thing I want to do. I want to write with the angels, to make their music, as they hear it and sing it, as close to it as I can get.

I know Micky, and you will, it will all happen for you - I know it will.

Yes, I know it will too Sage, but if only mum and dad would understand; they don't get it, they can't hear it of course, so they don't know what I'm talking about.

I know, but you'll have to be patient with them, and with most people you meet Micky; you'll sort of have to learn how to relate in ordinary ways so you don't freak people out so much, as most people won't understand you and they might even be afraid of you.

Yes, I suppose you're right Sage, I'll have to give that some thought, sort of like living in two

worlds - is that how it is for you Sage?

Yes. I'm getting better at it, but takes a lot of work.

Okay then, thank's for the advice; and thank you again Sage for what you did for me. And I know it wasn't you as such, it was the angels, but you know what I mean, and I'm very appreciative of it. I'm only young, yet I feel so old - you understand, don't you?

I do Micky.

Oh, and by the way Sage, come here, downstairs - MUM, DAD, I'M GOING TO GIVE SAGE HER PRESENT... here you are Sage, I hope you like the colour; I chose it, as you can see, it's a lovely pink.

A BIKE! Yes, oh thank you all; yes, I wanted a bike, Doug and I were going to buy one later today, thank you all so much, now I can go riding with Tommy, thank you, thank you.

Oh we're so happy Sage, it's the least thing we can do for you. We hope you enjoy it - can you ride it?

Oh yes, I know how, I've seen other children on their bikes, it won't be very hard, I can't wait.

Good, and thank you again Sage; thank you so much for all you've done for us, and for Micky; and we'll do as your friend suggests, Donny and I feel so much better, so relieved, thank you.

What did you tell them Sage?

Not me Micky.

Come on Sage, let's go, we have to meet Cath.

Goodbye then, and thank you again, see you soon, please come again; all of you come over for dinner one evening, and we can see you ride your bike Sage.

Okay, we will... I'll call you Margaret.

Thank you Doug for bringing her over here - well, nothing to worry about her riding, look at her go up the driveway, she's good at it, incredible, just like Micky; he sat at the piano and away he went, it was incredible, you'd have thought he'd been learning all his life, when he'd never even touched it before.

Yes, wonders! See ya Don, Margaret. See ya Micky.

Bye!

*

Hi Sage, you got your new bike, that was nice of them.

Yes Cath, it's perfect, just right, it's so good; thank you both for organising it.

Did you know we'd tell them it was what you wanted? Is there anything we can keep secret from you?

No, there's nothing you can keep secret; but no, I didn't know, sometimes they keep secrets from me.

Phew, that's a relief.

And I have a secret that I am to share with you both. I was told it this morning, so I guess it won't be much of a secret for long.

Yeah Sage, what is it?

Cathy you're pregnant; and it's going to be a twins, a girl and boy.

OH MY GOD; are you serious Sage?

That's what they say.

DOUG!

YES CATH - WOW, what can I say... THAT WAS QUICK!

It sure was, but I can't feel a thing.

You will Cath; and even though you're oldish for having children, you won't have any difficulties, and they will grow up being best friends. However, I'm afraid, they will be the only children you'll both be having.

Oh Sage, how wonderful, what wonderful news; gosh - we need to celebrate!

Can you tell us more about them Sage?

No Doug, sorry - no more; not for now, anyway. Some things are best left unsaid.

Like the whole of life for most of us. Yeah, okay, fair enough. She just told Don and Margaret about Micky's life: how he's going to have three wives, the first two will die, and with the third he will have three children; and how he's going to do something amazing with music.

Did you Sage?

I didn't, it was his angel telling them because they were worried about him. They don't know how to deal with him, but now they will. He's too different; and so they don't know how to be with him, but now they'll be able to let him be more himself. They still won't understand him, but that doesn't matter, because he's not going to stay at home for very long, he'll move out into his own apartment, which they will set up for him. But they will love him and learn to appreciate him, like the music he will make; they will learn to love it too, just as the whole world will. It will seem very odd at first, but people will warm to it; and in the end they will love it, and need it; and it will help them, like it will help his parents, take themselves out of themselves helping to expand and have a different perspective on life.

Wow Sage!

Yes, Micky has a dynamic role to play in the destiny of the world, which was why he was healed, and why he had to go through the beginning of his life as he did. The angels are going to work through him, just like they are me, only in different ways; and that's what's going to start happening more, because it has to, because people need new hope and need to see there are other unseen ways.

And you can't tell us about our children Sage - what they will do?

No Doug, I can't. It's not for you to know. However I can tell you that all you are going through because of me will help them as they are growing up - does that make sense?

Yes, I suppose so. It's so tempting wanting to know, wanting it all to be laid out for you. I know you told Don and Margaret that bad things were going to happen to Micky's first two wives, but how their angel put it, made it sound like it was the best possible thing that could happen for him, and presumably for them, too.

Well it is! That is how life is for us all.

So you say Sage, it's just so hard to accept all the bad things and to see them as really being good. Bad things are good; so that means our bad feelings are good, too - I've not thought of it that way. Gosh, you are a wonder Sage.

*

Twins Doug, and how do you feel about that?

Ecstatic, over the moon; god I'm so happy. And you?

The same. But are you sure you don't have any bad feelings, any fear - apprehension?

No, not yet, but I'm sure I will. Give me a few days and I'll be shitting myself - what about you, you don't feel so good obviously?

I do, but I have this niggling bit that runs along the lines of: as we're finding out for ourselves about all of this, and so about how much we've got going on within us that we've got no idea about, most of which is bad stuff, so won't all that hidden stuff negatively affect our children? They are in my womb, and I'm in no way perfect; and so they will be taking on or absorbing all of my negativity and imperfection, and for all I know, all of yours too, Doug, you being their father.

Oh god Cath, I'd not thought of that.

No, and so what can we do about it?

Nothing; there's nothing we can do, it's just a pity we're not perfect; and yet who is, and most people do okay with their children.

So it seems on the surface. The more I think about what Sage says and what we've been talking about lately, the more I'm not so sure. I mean, look at Micky's parents, from what you said, really they've got no idea about him, and probably not even a real connection or feeling for him. Oh sure they love him, they say they love him; but do they - do they really? And how can you tell? It might all just be in their minds, they might only *believe* they love him. So that love might not actually be genuine. They see him as some sort of weird stranger, and for all we know, like some alien who's come to live with them. He was an alien before, and now he's another type. And so who's to say that we might see our two, as aliens; twins, god, they are going to be a handful, we are going to need all the help we can get.

Yes, but in a way I'm glad that it's like that, because if it were only one boy or girl, then I'd wonder what it was like not having the other sex. So I'm wrapped, and we'll manage - somehow. Sage might help us, and it's a long time away with the rate things are changing around here. God, we've only been together for two weeks, and being married, and now you're pregnant - WOW!

Yes, Wow. I do feel very good, and very loving of them already; it's amazing, as soon as Sage told us, it was like my whole focus suddenly shifted from me to them. I exist for them, they are all

that is important, not me; suddenly there is someone else in the world other than myself who is the most important person - persons. What are we going to name them?

I don't know, we've got plenty of time, and maybe Sage can help us with that, if that's okay with you?

Yes, I'm open to anything. And she might be able to advise me what is the best food to eat and how to relate to them; yes, oh it's so good, I feel very happy now Doug. And as you say, we can only do our best, parents have been doing that forever; and we've all got masses of things buried within us that are wrong with us. And even if it turns out that the twins are so different from us that we can't relate to them, oh well, that too I guess is how it is meant to be - that seems to be the central theme about everything these days. And it's not as if we have a say in it, do we, it's up to Them up there, we're just the guinea pigs running around on the ground thinking we know what we're doing and what it's all about, when we don't have a clue.

Oh I do feel so happy Doug, so incredible happy, even spoilt, being with you and Sage, and how it's all turning out. Twins - just fancy that, in nine months time they are going to be lying here between us and our lives will no longer be the same.

They're not the same every day. But I know what you mean. And it will be so good, I can't wait. I can see them here now, Jack and Jill, or Jill and Jack; and it will be wonderful Cath. I couldn't have dreamed of anything more wonderful, just you and me and them two - wow, I can't wait.

Silly me, they are already here now with us in a sense, so we can just pretend they are here in person - what do you say to that?

Yes, great idea. So it's the four of us now in everything. Wow, just like that, and being able to know so soon, it must have only just happened according to when your period was.

Really we were hoping, weren't we, we hadn't specifically spoken about it, but neither of us mentioned contraception.

I'd not brought it out fully, yet it has been there in the back of my mind; so yes, you're right, and now here they are.

Yes, and as you say, to know so early; some women know they have conceived saying they can feel it, but I've been too distracted and not focused on that, however at least now I can be.

Oh Doug, how wonderful, and I do love you so much and I love being with you. I never want to leave you for a moment, I hate it when we are apart.

Yeah, me too. I love you so much and look forward to seeing you again every time we're apart, and so because of that, I don't mind being apart, as long as it's not for too long. It's like how I'd look forward to seeing you each time I brought Sage to you, but now it's even more intense

feelings. Oh we are so blessed; yes, that's how I feel right at this moment - thank you Mother and Father!

Yes, thank you Both!

What are you doing Sage?

I'm writing some children's stories; pretending I am the child.

Can I read them?

Sure Cath. This one's called:

Itchy Witchy Watchy.

Itchy Witchy Watchy lives in the garden.

Itchy Witchy Watchy lives under a large grey rock that's covered with green moss.

Itchy Witchy Watchy mostly comes out at night.

Itchy Witchy Watchy is not scared of the dark.

Itchy Witchy Watchy loves cool dewy nights.

Itchy Witchy Watchy has very soft slimy skin.

Itchy Witchy Watchy is a gorgeous rich hot-pink colour.

Itchy Witchy Watchy's wife's name is, Metchy Netchy Nichy.

Itchy Witchy Watchy and Metchy Netchy Nichy, love each other very much.

Itchy Witchy Watchy and Metchy Netchy Nichy live happily under the large grey rock with all their children. Would you like to know the names of their children? Oh you would! Well, there's: Notch, Potch, Zotch, Totch, Cotch, Otch, Botch, Hotch, Lotch, and Nerrelleous.

And they are all soft, slimy and hot-pink, just like Itchy Witchy Watchy and Metchy Netchy Nichy.

Little Miss Sage and Mr Pobblebonk.

Once upon a cool autumn morning, Little Miss Sage, who's four, and staying at Grandma's house, woke up early in the morning and heard a strange noise. It was coming from outside, and it happened every now and again, and it sounded like: pobblebonk.

Grandma, also was wondering what the strange noise was, and together with Little Miss Sage, decided to investigate.

Once Little Miss Sage was dressed, and eager to go on an adventure before breakfast, she stepped out onto the dewy lawn and ran to see if Itchy Witchy Watchy was awake. Itchy said he'd had a wonderful night sliding along the grass on the night's dew, eating all Grandma's favourite plants. And when Little Miss Sage asked him if he knew what the strange pobblebonk noise was, he said he didn't, yet it seemed to be coming from down the road, possibly from the little dam. And he said he too would like to go on an adventure before he went to sleep for the day. So Little Miss Sage picked him up, feeling him soft and slimy in her hand, and with Grandma, off they all went.

On their way to the dam, they passed through the lovely self-sown Goodenia ovata patch (which later got mowed to be used as a carpark - and did Itchy have something to say about that!) that was looking beautifully lush green because the rain had finally come after so many months of it being so dry, crunching along on the little yellow stones of the path.

After a little while they arrived at the dam, and sure enough, it did seem to be the source of the strange pobblebonk noise that they kept hearing every now and again, a deep: pobblebonk, resonating through the otherwise quiet early morning.

Then as they neared the yellow clay-coloured water, the noise suddenly stopped, and just when they thought they'd have to go back home having no idea who was making the strange pobblebonk noise; Itchy said, look over there, there's Mr Pobblebonk.

And sure enough, there he was, sitting in the reeds looking at them with his two big eyes. Hello Mr Pobblebonk, Little Miss Sage said to him, was it you who was making all that froggy noise?

Yes, he said, I was singing to my beloved Mrs Pobblebonk, calling her to come into the dam with me because the water is so fresh and cool, and it was time they had a swim together after the long hot summer.

And looking around for Mrs Pobblebonk, Little Miss Sage then saw her hiding over to the side looking out from under a small log. Hello Mrs Pobblebonk, Little Miss Sage said to her, are you going for a swim with Mr Pobblebonk?

No, not yet replied Mrs Pobblebonk, Mr Pobblebonk has not yet sung the right song, so I'm waiting here for him to sing it. He's a bit rusty, and his voice a bit croaky, as he's not sung all summer; but he's warming up, and so I'm coming closer, and I don't think it will be long now before I join him in the water.

Little Miss Sage then put her finger in the yellow dam water, and feeling how cold it was, didn't think she'd be wanting to go for an early morning swim herself; and then suddenly feeling a rumble in her stomach, because she'd not had her breakfast yet, said goodbye to Mr and Mrs Pobblebonk, as Grandma said let's go back to the house, and Itchy was looking very sleepy.

Mr Pobblebonk, then said: pobblebonk, the strange noise coming out of his throat; and Mr's Pobblebonk hopped a bit closer to the edge of the water; and the magpies started singing too, and Little Miss Sage sang pobblebonk; and the sun was shining its golden light in the clear blue sky, and it was going to be another good day for going to the beach.

And as they crunched their way along the yellow path through the green with yellow-star flower Goodenias, back toward the house, Mr Pobblebonk was singing away, still practising and hoping he was pleasing Mrs Pobblebonk so she'd come and swim with him.

When they got home, Little Miss Sage put Itchy Witchy Watchy down on the still damp grass that was near his big-rock home, as he was eager to be home so he could go to sleep for the day with Metchy Netchy Nichy and all their children (who's names I'm sure you do remember so I won't repeat them all again).

And there was Grandpa standing on the step wanting to hear if they'd found out who was making that pobblebonk noise. So Little Miss Sage ran to him, and he lifted her up in his still strong arms, and into the house for breakfast they all went. POBBLEBONK!

Little Miss Sage and Itchy's precious, priceless, present.

Once upon a warm summer evening, Little Miss Sage, staying up very late because Grandma and Grandpa had a friend staying over, and it was all too exciting for her to go to bed, was sitting on the floor looking through her dye-a-mund at the light.

Grandma and Grandpa's old and dear friend who'd just come back from working in the newly opened mine 'up in the North West', looking at Little Miss Sage, asked: Sage, what is that you are looking at?

And Little Miss Sage, said: My name is Little Miss Sage; and I am looking at my dye-a-mund that Itchy gave me.

Itchy? Asked Grandma and Grandpa's friend from the mine, looking at Grandma with a questioning and puzzled look on his face.

He's a slug, a very pretty pink slug that lives in the front garden under the large grey rock. And yes, he gave it to Sage.

Itchy... a slug... and he gave this to you Little Miss Sage?

Yes. He said Grandma's digging had unearthed it, she was planting more of his favourite food in the garden for him.

He and his voracious ever-expanding family, eat all my plants, sighed Grandma.

I see; and would I be able to have a look at it Little Miss Sage; and you call it a... dye-a-mund?

Yes, said Little Miss Sage, passing the dye-a-mund to him.

Grandma said: we think it's some sort of quartz crystal, perhaps, we don't know, but it is very pretty, isn't it?

It is stunningly beautiful, said Grandma and Grandpa's friend from the diamond mine, I've never seen anything as beautiful. It is simply radiant, exquisite, luxurious, magnificent - incredible: SPLENDIFEROUS! And if I am right, it's far more than just an ordinary piece of quartz... quite extraordinary. And he reluctantly handed the dye-a-mund back to Little Miss Sage, who upon taking it from him, tried to look at him through it.

Then the man from diamond mine asked: Little Miss Sage, did this Itchy-slug tell you anything about this dye-a-mund?

Yes, he said that a very long time ago, long before Grandma and Grandpa's house was built, a man from another country camped on this land. And this man being from a different country ate some of the bad mushrooms one night, the ones everyone knows not to eat, and he nearly went off his head, and stepped on one of Itchy's brothers squashing him into the ground, which was very tragic; and because of that, when this dye-a-mund fell out of the little bag he was carrying it in, with the other smaller ones like it, Itchy and the rest of his family slimed it all over it then covered it with dirt so the man in his madness wouldn't know where to find it. Then over the years, long after the mad-man had left, and Itchy having forgotten all about it, suddenly saw it the other night by the silver light of the moon because of Grandma's digging in the garden. So he gave it to me.

I see, said the man from the mine, astonished at Little Miss Sage. And you say this Itchy, is a slug?

Yes, said Little Miss Sage, if Grandma will let me go outside, I'll take you to meet him, he'll be out now that it's dark, he sleeps during the day and eats Grandma's plants during the night.

Well, alright... yes... I'd certainly like to meet this Itchy friend of yours... and tell me Little Miss Sage, did he tell you anything else about this dye-a-mund of yours?

Oh yes, he said it was called: Zarina, Silver Light of the Moon; and that I am: the Keeper of Moonlight; and it was: Written in the Stars; and that it's an uncut dye-a-mund, and probably over

a thousand carrots and worth about twenty mill on todays market. He does say the strangest things sometimes.

And then and there for Grandma and Grandpa, the penny dropped; and Grandma said, well, in that case Sage, Itchy can eat all the plants he wants! Thank God for Itchy Witchy Watchy!

And, just in case you were wondering why a beautiful pink soft slimy slug got his name Itchy Witchy Watchy... well, that's another story, one which Itchy is yet to tell us.

*

Come on Sage, this way, it's over here, gee you're such a good bike rider. And you've never ridden a bike before! Gee Sage; I wish I was like you, you can do everything so easy, it's all so hard for me.

It's not all hard for you Tommy, not the things you are good at. So where are we?

We're near the beach, there's a secret track I know down this way, not many people go there and I want to show it to you; all the trees overhang the path and it feels mysterious, like a fairy path or where they'd like to be; and there's a big rock we can sit on and look out over the bay. And it's not far, just down here a bit more.

Okay Tommy.

*

See, here we are; look at the view, what a perfect day, and wasn't that good with all the trees?

Oh yes, it was magical; there were lots of nature spirits flying along after us, you even had one sitting on your handlebars, he was having a right fun time being bounced up and down.

Gee, I wish I could see them.

I know Tommy, but it's not for you, you have other things to do, and one of them you are going to do today.

I am - how do you mean?

I need you to help me to find something.

What?

A big crystal. It's very old. It was lost near here quite a long time ago, and I want to find it. The

angels will tell us where it is, but you'll have to get it for me - do you want to help?

Sure, like a treasure hunt - of course I do! I'll do anything to help you Sage. So what do we do, where do we go?

Okay, we can leave our bikes here, they'll be safe, the angels and nature spirits said they'll place someone on guard so they don't get stolen.

Great!

And we are to climb down to the beach; can you find a way down for us?

Sure Sage, I know a way, I've been here lots of times. I come when I want some peace and quite; it's my own secret place, and we can put the bikes in here behind these bushes, you know, just in case, it's what I do when I've been here before by myself. I don't tell Tony or Bruce where I'm going, as they always want to come, so I have to sneak off without them seeing me or when they are busy doing other things. Come on, hold my hand, it's rather steep, but you can hold onto the little tree trunks, they are safe and solid.

Good...

Okay now, so where to from here? This is exciting; what are we looking for - a crystal?

Yes, it's quite a big one, it will fit into the palm of my hand.

Wow, and what are you going to do with it?

The angels are going to use it in some of the healings I'll be doing in future.

You mean you're going to be healing other people like you did Tony?

Yes, but don't tell anyone, it has to be a secret between us; as does this crystal we're about to find. It's worth a lot of money, and bad people would take it.

Don't worry Sage, I'll protect you, and I'll make sure no one sees us. Okay, so which way?

Well, you see that first boathouse down there; do you think we can get in behind it?

Sure, I've been there before too, it's a bit difficult to start, but once you've over the top of the little sand dune, then it's better, you can walk all the way along behind all the boathouses.

Good; we want to get to the third one - it should be painted red.

Yes, it is. Okay, look, there's no one coming, let's go... now keep your head down, you'll have to crawl under this prickly bush, I'll hold it up out of the way so you don't catch your dress on it... There you are, see, we can easily walk now... look at all the rubbish, it's such pity people are so messy, there's always new junk, they just throw it behind their boathouses thinking the tide will take it all away, but it doesn't, and they never come back here to clean it up. But you find some good things at times, once I found a neat penknife, I've got it back home.

Will there be people around?

Na, not at this time of day; later maybe, if the weather is good, but we'll be okay. Do you want me to have a look, I can sneak along between these two boathouses and check out who's on the beach?

Yes Tommy, if you don't mind, that would be good...

No one Sage, the coast is clear, we're on our own. I ran down to the end, and had a look behind the ones down there; sometimes older boys get in there to smoke, but we're alone, no one but us. So now what?

Okay, we have to go to the left hand side of the red house, this one, there should be a sign of some sort, I see a picture in my mind but I can't see exactly what it is - I'll know it when I see it. It's a sign to show that it is the right boathouse, and that things haven't changed too much...

Okay, what about this mark here, I've not noticed it before; looks like someone has scratched something into it here, like a sign or something.

Yes, that's it, that's why I couldn't understand, because it's not understandable, time has eroded it away.

What did it used to say?

It was just a marker, like an arrow pointing that way up the hill; and that's where we have to go next, up the hill. Can you find a path for us Tommy?

Sure, we might have to crawl a bit, but I'm sure we can do it - how far up are we going; the path we rode along is up there somewhere.

No, not as far as the path, it's not that far. I don't know for sure, I'll tell you when we get there; and we will need something to dig with, like a little spade or shovel - I wish they'd have told me that before, as I could have asked you to bring one.

No worries about that Sage; why they didn't tell you was because they knew there'd be one the beach. Hang on a moment, I'll be right back; I saw it before, it's one of those kid's plastic ones, a green one that's been left behind - will that be all right?

Perfect Tommy...

See... okay; now follow me... you okay Sage? ...shall I keep going higher? ...more to the left? ...all right? ...look out for this bush, it's got a few thorns on this dead bit, the other parts are all right... god, it stinks in here, something must be dead nearby... you sure you want to keep going? ...right, and up... well, I think we can get through there, you'll have to go on your stomach, follow me... phew, I'm getting a bit hot and sweaty, how are you Sage, you've got shrubberies in your hair - you look even prettier! Hey, it's nice in here, just the two of us, no one around, this is great, this is like our own secret hiding place. I'll have to remember where it is. So, what now Sage - do you know where we are?

No, but it doesn't matter, we've very close now; I think it should be just over that little bit of sand over there.

Okay, follow me... yes, we can squeeze through here... shit, watch that bull ant, he'll give you a nasty bite, it itches for days... hang on Sage, I'll shovel him out of the way... there you go Mr, no we're not going to hurt you, just moving you out of the way, you don't want us crawling all over you now, do you... there you go, ah, good, he's going off down the hill... okay Sage, we're nearly there I think... yes, there's a depression and we can sit in the bottom of it... hang on again whilst I shovel out those dead leaves and sticks, lucky it hasn't rained for a while, it would be harder and we'd be covered in stuff. Okay, you all right, here we are - is this the place?

Yes, right here where we are sitting Tommy; can you dig down here?

Sure, easy, this is just sand - how far down?

I don't know, but you'll know, you'll hit it with the shovel.

All right then, but the sand will keep sliding back into the hole. Here Sage, you sit over here, I'll even it out for you... then I can stand over the hole and we won't keep making the sand slide in. Okay now, here we go... digging... I'm digging away, digging for gold - you sure it's not gold we're digging for - that would be real neat.

No Tommy, only a big crystal, that's all.

Well I'm down about half a metre, I won't be able to go much further unless I get into major excavations, because the sand is going to keep falling in; but I don't mind digging Sage, it's easy going, not too many tree roots, and they are only small, and the sand comes away easily. And

how did it get here anyway Sage, who put the crystal here?

It's a long story Tommy. It's goes something like this. A man, long ago in South Africa, stole it from another man who'd found it in a mine he was working in. He didn't tell anyone he'd found it, so he too stole it. And the man who stole it from him came here to Australia and lost it one night when he ate some bad mushrooms. And then it was found by a little girl who had the same name as me, and she looked after it for a while. But then, when she'd grown up, she had it stolen by the man she thought she was in love with. He stole it from her down there on the beach, and he ran away from her up the dune we came up, but there wasn't as many trees and shrubs back then as there was now. And it fell out of his pocket in his hurry to get away from her, which he realised must have happened when he'd got to the top of the hill. However because it was dark, he decided that he'd come back and look for it in the morning, which he did, but couldn't find it, so he left that mark on the side of the boathouse so as to remember exactly which track it was that he had to continue his search on; but he never came back again, because he run got over by a car the next day. And it's been hiding out here ever since.

Gee, what a story, and I'm ready for a rest... hang on, what was that... yes, I think I felt something Sage, I'll dig down with my hands... yes, there's something hard down here, like a rock or something, it might be it... yes... here we go, LOOK SAGE, IT IS A BIG CRYSTAL JUST AS YOU SAID!

Yes, it's beautiful; so radiant, exquisite, luxurious, magnificent - perfect! Oh Tommy, thank you so much, that's the best thing anyone has ever done for me, you are such a big help. Tommy you have no idea just how much I need this crystal, it is what's going to help me through the rest of my life. And you know something also Tommy, the story of this crystal doesn't end here, in a way it's only just beginning-

Why, how do you mean?

Because one day Tommy, when I'm finished with it, I'm going to give it to you.

You are?

Yes, really it's for your first daughter, the one with red flaming hair and green eyes like her mother. She will know how to use it, and it will help her with the work she is to do. So you see Tommy, it's all meant to be, you are one of the main people in the story of Little Miss Sage's life.

So I am going to keep it safe for you Tommy, and then when I am finished with it, you are to hide it, to keep it safe, and to tell no one about it. And you have to promise me Tommy on your dying word of honour, that you will never tell a soul about it; that you will not ever show it to anyone, not even your wife - and especially not your wife; because if you do, she will take it, and sell it, and it will be gone, and then it will be of no use to your first daughter. And as I said, really it's for her, and for her to pass onto her daughter, your granddaughter Tommy, so it's a very

special crystal.

Yeah, well it sure looks beautiful, I've never seen anything like it before. I've been into em crystal shops, but nothing has ever looked as good as this. I've got some crystals, but they are dull compared to this beauty. But as you say, Sage, if you are going to give it to me when you've finished with it; yes, I promise you I will treasure it and not tell a soul about it or show it to anyone; and I will pass it on to my first daughter. Oh Sage, you make up such good stories.

Yes Tommy, but it's not just a story, it's real; and I know you don't really understand now, but you will as you grow up. So put your right hand on your heart now Tommy and hold the crystal in your left hand and against your chest and repeat after me: I, Tommy, friend of Sage, will keep hidden this crystal she has given me when she gives it back to me; hidden, and to be given to my first daughter who I will name Sage, after my best friend Sage, who told me where to find the crystal. And also say: I, Tommy, promise this now to Sage this day, and I will never forget...

Well done Tommy -very good!

It's so exciting Sage; I will never forget. I promise!

And you know Tommy, there will be times when you might want to give it away, or even sell it; and you'll be tempted to tell your wife about it, and show her, because she will say that she wishes that she had something like this, and you won't like keeping it a secret from her, but you just have to. It's not yours to keep, you are to be the secret guardian; and as I said, it's really to be your first daughter's, and she will hide it and keep it safe, and pass it on when her time comes to do so; and it will go on down the line of many daughters to come. It is a very, very, very, the most very, special crystal, and I am going to empower it with my life and the work I will be doing.

I do understand Sage. Yes, all right, I promise. It's something bigger than me, something I don't really understand, something that it's not for me to understand, like so many things to do with you Sage. Yet I am the lucky one, because you are my friend, and because of all these things you are telling me about my future.

We're all lucky Tommy, in our own ways, it's just that some of us specifically have work to do for the angels, and so for God, in this way. We're all working for God, doing what God's wants; and this is what we are to do. Now, how tired are you, do you want to look for more things?

More things, like what - I'm not tired!

Gold.

GOLD!

Yes, a nugget of gold - would you like to find that?

WOULD I, are you kidding! I'd love to find it... but where... here?

No, but nearby; we have to go back down to the beach and behind the boatsheds again.

Boathouses Sage... okay, follow me, that's easy going down. Here, we can cut through here, that'll take us down... see, easy, easier than going up. Ok, now what? I love having adventures with you Sage, this is a real treasure hunt... are you sure there's gold here, here on the beach... how could it get on the beach, where would it come from - the sea?

No, it fell though old rotten floor boards of one these boathouses, long ago. They've been here on the beach a long time, but they used to not be looked after so well as they are now, and back then, there were holes in the wooden floors of some of them, and the nugget of gold you're now going to find Tommy, fell through the floorboards without its owner knowing he'd lost it. He realised later that it had gone, but couldn't find it, as he didn't know what happened to it whilst he was visiting the boathouse.

Really, was he was a robber or something - a pirate with the loot?

No, just a man who had gold in his pocket, he'd been at the mines. Victoria had lots of gold once - don't you know that from school; and he had lots of it in his pocket, and a piece fell out.

Yeah, I've been up to the mines with mum and dad, we had a look at that place where you can go gold-panning, but it was a long time ago and I don't remember it very well; we didn't find anything much, just a little bit I think.

All right, now let me see; we have to go to the eighth one from that end, it's dark blue...

This one?

Yes, now we have to go around to the back again - how we can do that?

I'll show you, I know how to get behind all these boathouses... here, this way, we have to go down the side of the yellow one, and then we can cut back to the blue one. You coming?

Yes, but I'm being told something else we need to know, you'll need that shovel again. Oh all right, I put on the steps of that green one so a child might find it, but I'll go get it, wait on... right, got it - anything else?

Yes, we have to measure with my shoe: six shoes along from the right hand side towards the middle, at the back, I'll show you when we get there... Now, here, take my shoe, and measure six shoes in toward the middle from this side... yes, like that, you can see the impressions clearly in

the sand. So that's six; now Tommy, this is the hard bit for you, you have to crawl under the boathouse twelve shoe-lengths in, it has to be in a straight line.

There's just enough room to get under it Sage, I'll dig out this bit here... Now I should be able to do it. I'll wriggle in, and I can see your foot - don't move it, so I'll take the line from that...

Okay Sage, I'm twelve shoes in, it's hard to move under here, now what?

Where the next shoe would go, you have to dig down about three shoe lengths.

...Yeah, all right, here goes, I hope I find something... I reckon I'm about there... I've measured it against the shovel and the sand is soft, it was easy, the water doesn't come up this far, and there's not too much rubbish; it's nice under here, nice and cool... Now what? OUCH!

What happened?

Banged my head.

You just have to dig around there where you are, it should be there somewhere, sieve the sand through your hand; it's about as big as fifty-cent piece, but much fatter.

Okay, gee I hope we find it... I'm using my hand instead of the shovel, digging deeper and wider in the hole around in a circle... Nothing yet Sage, but I'm all right, it's easy.

They're saying you're nearly there Tommy, a little more toward me.

Okay... GOT IT! I'VE GOT IT SAGE - WOW, WHAT A BEAUTY, YEP, IT'S A REAL NUGGET ALL RIGHT, I'M COMING OUT... Look Sage, what a beauty, wow it's beaut, look at how gold it is, dark and rough on this side, but shinny and smooth on this side; and heavy too; here, feel how heavy it is.

Yes, it is Tommy, it's lovely, and I'm so glad you found it. Well done Tommy, you're my Hero!

Really Sage?

Yes Tommy. And here, it's for you; for you as a reward for helping me find my crystal.

For me?

Yes.

But it's gold Sage, it's worth much more than the crystal; you should have it, it's yours really, you knew where it was, if it weren't for you, it'd still be down there and who would ever know?

No Tommy, I love the crystal, I am more than happy with it. It's what we came for, the nugget is just a little extra, just for you.

Thank you Sage! Wow, what a find, I'll keep it safe too, like you said about the crystal when you give it to me. I promise I'll never sell it either, no matter what, it's special, just between the two of us. So I will keep it safe with the crystal, they can keep each other company. So here Sage, you have it until you don't need them anymore like you said.

No Tommy, the nugget is yours, you are free to do with it as you please. I only ask you to never tell about or show the crystal to anyone until it's time to give it to your first daughter. You'll know when she's ready for it - that's all I care about.

All right Sage, I promise ya. I will never tell or show a soul, when you give it me - I will never lose it!

Good.

Now what Sage... this is great fun; this is the best day of my life - any more nuggets we can find?

No Tommy, not today, not here, we might go looking for others another time; I'll have to see what the angels say.

Your angels are great Sage, they must know everything - how do they know?

They can see into our world Tommy, and yet we can't see them, so they know all we do. It's nothing for them to know what's going on with everyone; you can't keep any secrets from them, they do know everything we do - they even record everything we say.

Wow, just think, being like that; wow, that would be amazing, looking in at everyone knowing what they are up to - you could find all the treasure you wanted!

How about we get some fish and chips on the way home Tommy?

Yeah, great idea Sage, I'm starving... yeah, but, oh bum, I don't have any money - do you?

No.

Oh that is a bum, oh well, my mum will give us something when we get back.

Have a look in your pockets Tommy, you might have some money in them.

Na, there's nothing in them, see, I'll show you... THERE IS SAGE! HOW DID YOU KNOW - LOOK, TWENTY... FORTY DOLLARS - SHIT, THAT'S MORE THAN ENOUGH! Sage, how did the money get in there?

The angels put it in your pockets, Tommy.

Forty dollars! Two twenties, one in each pocket and one for each of us; and just like that - out of thin air! WOW, I don't want to ever spend this money Sage; would you mind, it's money from the angels, it's too precious to spend on fish and chips. I want to wrap the nugget in it, and your crystal when you give it to me, and keep it forever, too.

Alright then Tommy, but it would be nice to have fish and chips.

Yeah I know, it would; and we could buy them for that shop up there over the road and sit on the big rock. Maybe we can come here again, and bring some money with us-

Look Tommy! Over there by the bottom of that bush, that black thing - what's that?

Where?

Over there, see, by that rocky part, at the bottom of that shiny bush - there's something black.

Oh yes, I see it... what is it... HEY SAGE, IT'S A WALLET... and LOOK, FIFTY BUCKS! And nothing else... WOW Sage, thank you Sage's angels! Fifty dollars, WOW, I've never had fifty dollars in my whole life. This is getting better each time!

Well it's yours Tommy, you can either keep it or the two twenties, and we'll use the other for the fish and chips.

Yeah all right; I still like the two twenties best Sage, if that's all right with you. I'll keep the nugget wrapped up in them, the orange and gold will go well together, and we'll use the fifty.

Ok, let's go.

YEAH!

*

Sage, you know, with your angels showing you where all the money is people lose, and just making it appear in my pocket like it did, and finding that gold - you'd never have to work. You could be rich Sage.

And is that what you'd like to be Tommy - rich?

Yeah, wouldn't you?

And what would you do with all the money?

Oh I dunno, give it to me mum and dad so they didn't have to work. Dad's always complaining about having to go to work so much, he wants to stay at home and make things with wood, that's what he loves to do, he made everything in our house. And mum wouldn't have to worry about not having enough money; and then I could buy a big house to live in, and I'd build a gigantic fish pond; and oh, I don't know... all sorts of things I'd do with it. So wouldn't you want a lot of money too, you know, to give to Doug and Cath, and get a house of your own?

Tommy, I want to tell you a secret, but you have to promise me that you won't tell anyone, especially Doug and Cath.

I promise... gee Sage, you're getting me to do a lot of promising. This nugget is beautiful, it seems to be getting shinier the more I hold it.

So you promise?

Yes.

I'm going to die soon-

DIE - SAGE, NO, YOU CAN'T DIE... WHAT DO YOU MEAN - DIE?

It's true Tommy. In about a years time, or possibly even sooner; maybe half a year. I'm not meant to live very long in the world. I am only here for a short time, and so my time is nearly up.

But Sage, what am I going to do without out you?

You have other people you are to be with Tommy. I'm only to be with you for a short time.

Oh no, Sage, don't tell me that, you're ruining a great day - the best day of my life; why do you want to go and say something like that... maybe it's not true?

It is, the angels have told me. But Tommy, for the rest of my life I will need your help.

Yes Sage, whatever you want, I'll do it.

Good. I want you to be with me when things start to get more exciting. I want you to keep

being my friend, just to help me however I need it, that's all.

Yes Sage, I am your friend and I will do whatever you want, like today, that was great fun, and I will do whatever you want, you just tell me.

Good. That's all I wanted to say about it for now Tommy; but please, don't tell anyone, and especially not Doug or Cath.

No, no one Sage; I couldn't tell them that, they'd be too upset, they won't want you to go.

I know, but they are having twins of their own, so they will be like a replacement for me.

So why can't you be here longer; why do you have to go?

I have other important work that I will need to do in heaven, Tommy. My time here as I am, like this, being able to walk, is for a very special reason, which I can't tell you yet what it's about, yet it's to do with the angels. But soon you will see, and start to get the idea, and then that will be when I need your support and help and friendship the most. I want someone my own age Tommy, someone like you who doesn't think I'm mad and is not afraid of me; someone who doesn't say that I'm a mad witch, and someone who doesn't ask me to keep doing things for them.

What sort of things?

Like to make the angels give them more money, or to make them right, and fix them up and take all their problems away. You accept me as I am Tommy, and that's what I really like about you, and it's what I need, just someone with whom I can be myself. I can say anything to you about anything, even like just now telling you I am going to die soon; and you don't freak out, you don't get angry with me, you don't tell me I can't be as I am. You take it all in your stride, you might not understand it all, but that doesn't matter, because how can you? However you're open to it, you don't shut the door on me and reject me, and that's more valuable to me Tommy than any gold or any money, and so that's what I want. So really you don't have to do anything other than just be how you are, and that's all I want.

Well in that case Sage, that's easy, as I can't be anyone else, can I? So that's all right. I don't like the bit about you dying, but if you, as you say, have got more important things to do in heaven, then I suppose you have to go into heaven to do them.

That's right Tommy. I can't stay here, and as you will see, by the time I am to go, there won't be anything left for me to do anyway.

How will you die?

I don't know yet, I've not been told; but that doesn't matter, it will all work out - you'll see.

I'll be sad when you go Sage.

Yes, I know Tommy, which is why I wanted to tell you about it now so you'll have time to get used to the idea. It's what will be best for you Tommy, you'll see. You won't see straight away when I leave you, but you will see as you get older. You'll see a lot from the short time we will be together, and it will all help you with your wife and your children, and that's what it's all for and what's important.

Because you see Tommy, and I know this might be hard for you to understand, but when I am in Heaven, I'll still be with you, only you won't be able to see me. But your daughter with the red hair will. And I will be helping her from Heaven just how the angels and Sisters are helping me now from Heaven. So we won't be separated entirely, only for a while, then I will come back into your life through your daughter.

Wow Sage, that sounds really good - so I'll wait for you?

Yes, but you'll be different then, and it will be good to be able to talk with you again through your daughter.

And Tommy, you know how you asked me about money and how you'd like to have lots of it, well, I can tell you that you will have lots of money, but you'll work hard for it, and it will come to you, and I will be helping you get it. Because by the time you and your wife are to have your children, you'll need to have lots of land; and instead of building a big fish pond Tommy, you're going to build a huge lake. And in that lake you're going to put all sorts of fish, fish people will be able to eat, and many water plants for the baby fish to live in ; and around the lake you'll make all sorts of other habitats for the animals and creatures; and you'll plant lots of food trees; and you're going to live in a small community of people who like what you do, and they will help you; and you'll need to learn how to live off the land and how to be at one with nature; and I will help you even though we won't be able to speak together until your daughter comes; and then when she does, when she's old enough, then I will come and help her even more, because she is to do more wondrous things than I will during my short time. And she will help all the creatures, and the whole planet, and help to make the earth new again - there will be many angels who will help her too. Because you see Tommy, the world is going to change a lot, and it will effect a lot of people; and people will be very unhappy with how things are, and they will want to live a new way, a better way, a way closer to nature and respecting the creatures and looking after them, and not just using them to make money from. And so that's what you're going to be involved in Tommy, this New Way; and so too will your wife and your whole family, and particularly your daughter with the red flaming hair. So a lot is going to happen for you Tommy; and you will see, all I have told you will happen; and we'll be able to talk again through your daughter, so you only have to wait until she grows up and then we can be together again as friends, just like this.

All right then Sage, that makes me feel better. That's good to know, so you won't really be gone forever, it's just a waiting time as you say; and I can do that, I'll be good, I promise, and I'll do all you say. When I get home I'll write it all down whilst it's fresh in my mind, and I will keep what I write hidden in my secret place; I've got a few of them, and no one will know; along with my two twenty dollars and my gold nugget and your crystal when you give it to me to look after. Yes, I'll do all that; and until you die, I won't tell anyone what you've said today; I won't tell them anything about anything we talk about. I want to keep it all secret Sage, because it's all so nice and I don't want people saying that I'm just making it up and telling stories like how they won't believe Tony or me when we tell them how you fixed his leg.

Good Tommy. Now, before we go home, there's one more thing that I want you to do for me.

Sure Sage, what's next, I love it when you say that; so what's next, what are we going to look for now, is it another nugget?

No.

Then what - what do you want me to do for you Sage?

I want you Tommy, to... kiss me.

KISS YOU SAGE!

Yes Tommy, you are my boyfriend aren't you?

I've never kissed a girl before Sage.

I know Tommy, but that doesn't matter, you just put your lips on my lips.

Alright, I'll try, I probably won't be any good at it; but if I practice, I'll get better.

Just kiss me Tommy, here now on Tommy's Big Rock in the evening sun... Thank you Tommy, that was perfect.

I'm glad it was all right Sage; yes, it was very nice. DO YOU WANT TO DO IT AGAIN?

No Tommy, not just now, that's all I wanted for now, maybe later.

Alright Sage, whatever you say.

Cath, would you mind if I came to the clinic on Saturday?

No, not at all Sage, you're welcome anytime. Why do you want to come?

I want to be with them, I want to see how they are and how I feel when I'm with them.

To see if you get any feelings about helping them like you helped Micky?

Yes.

I see.

There's some things I want to work out for myself. It's one thing having so many things told to you, but I want to see certain things for myself.

I understand Sage. Do you want to talk about them?

No, I just want to feel what I feel. I understand a lot now, but still there are some aspects to it all that I don't really think I understand, so I just want to be with them and see what happens.

See if *anything* happens you mean?

Yes.

Well that's all right with me Sage, whether anything happens or not. Would you prefer it if I tell their families not to be there, it's their day with their children, I could make up some excuse if you'd rather just be there alone with them.

No, that's all part of it too. I want everyone to be there.

All right. If there is anything you want me to do, just say or tell Doug.

Yes I will, thank you.

And by the way Sage, I've talked over what you said with Doug; and although we find it hard to accept, we do feel we have to trust that you'll be all right, that your angel friends will look after you when you go off with Tommy riding and doing what you want to do. And if we have any worries about you, then as you said, that's for us to work through those bad feelings so we can uncover the truth of them.

Good Cath, thank you both for trusting me. I'll be all right, nothing bad is going to happen me, the angels won't let anything bad happen.

Yes, that's what we hope.

Now Tommy, we have to catch the train to Hastings; so, do you know how to do that?

Yes, but it's a few train rides Sage, there's no direct line, we have to catch a train towards the city, then get off that one and catch the one down to Hastings. But that's okay, they run all the time and I've been down there with Jed my brother, he likes to go fishing down there sometimes with a mate of his who owns a boat. He's taken me out with them fishing in the bay, and we catch the train down there.

Alright, that's good then; and it's okay for you to be gone all day?

Yes, mum said it's fine, she doesn't need me to do anything for her.

Good, so let's walk to the station.

Ok, but one problem - no money. I spent the rest of that fifty dollars.

That's okay Tommy, it's not a problem, the angels will show us where to get some money.

You beaut Sage, another adventure! Alright, so do we need to take anything else - lunch, something to drink?

No, we'll get it all on the way. I don't want to be encumbered with anything - having to carry stuff; I just want us to go as we are. Is that all right with you?

Not a problem Sage, whatever you say.

Alright then, let's go... and what's that paper being blown along in the gutter over there Tommy...

TWENTY DOLLARS SAGE! YOU WERE RIGHT, THEY WILL GIVE US THE MONEY WE NEED. AND LOOK, MORE! ANOTHER TWENTY, SHIT SAGE...

And over there Tommy... and look, here's another five-

AND I'VE GOT TEN. FIFTY-FIVE DOLLARS SAGE! That should be more than enough.

*

We get off here Sage for the train to Hastings, and if we're lucky, we might only have to wait five minutes or so, and we are the only ones on the platform... Oh no Sage, I don't like the look of that bloke, he's a vagrant, maybe we should move over there and wait until he passes.

No Tommy, it will be all right. You've not got anything to worry about, nothing bad is going to

happen to us, no one can hurt us.

G'day Love, mate, you two seem a bit young for being out by yourselves, where's your parents, and what are you - runaways? I now about them ones; you want to come with old Bill, I know a place we can go and have a few quiet drinks? Nothing else, mind you, I don't do none of that other stuff with young'ns, just a couple of drinks, you wouldn't mind a couple of drinks would you?

No thank you Bill, we don't drink; but thanks for asking us.

Oh that's a pity Love, you sure you won't change your mind? What about you young fella, you look like you could do with a bit of a drink? You see, I gets lonely, drinking all the time by myself, it's a bad habit it is, and I shouldn't be suggesting it to you both, it's good that you don't drink, and I wouldn't recommend that you start; but how about just a little one, you know, we can have a chat about things.

Sorry Bill, but we've got to catch the next train.

Oh Yeah - where you off to then?

Hastings.

Oh Yeah, right the way to end, I know it well, often go down there myself for a change of scenery. So you won't have a little drink with me then?

No Bill, we won't.

Very well then... say, you can't spare an old bloke like me a few dollars can you?

Tommy, give the rest of our money to Bill-

Sage, you sure; then we won't have any!

It doesn't matter, Bill needs it more than we do.

Alright... here you go Bill.

Oh thank you Love, you're the greatest, and may the angels give you a thousand blessings... you know they come to me sometimes, and they says: Bill, you're going to drink yourself into your grave; and I says: yeah I know, so don't just stand there looking at me, why don't you stop me. But they don't of course, and I keep hitting the bottle, I can't stop myself, but I wish I could; I've a mate, you know, who says he'll give me work fixing cars - I'm right good with cars - as soon as I

stop with the grog; but that's all right for him, isn't it, because he ain't having the taste for it that I have.

Do you really want to give up your drinking Bill?

Yes Love, I do; I really do, more than anything in the world. You know, if you'd asked me that some years ago I'd have said the same thing, but I'd have been lying to you, and to myself. And what I've realised about myself with the little brain I've got left, is that I actually - and I had to admit this to myself, I love being on the grog; you know, the freedom it brings, even though it also brings hard times, too - the loneliness, the cold nights; but still, up until now, I have had to admit that I kind'a like all that. But not anymore Love, I'm getting on, the best of me is starting to waste away, and it'll be too late soon, I can feel it slipping past me; so to answer your question, Love: yes, I'm ready, I've had a good go of it, but now I'm ready for those bloody angels of mine to come and sort me out once and for all!

Shake my hand Bill.

What for Love? You don't want to touch a dirty old hand like mine.

Yes I do, and it's not dirty, that can wash off, that's just a bit of grime, but you yourself Bill are not dirty.

Oh Love, that's the best thing anyone has ever said to me... and just think, from a beautiful young lass such as yourself. All right then, I will shake it, as I'm pleased to meet you Love, and may I ask you what your name is?

It's Sage, Bill; and this Tommy.

Do you want to shake my hand too, young Tommy.

Should I Sage?

No Tommy, that's all, it's done now - can you feel it Bill?

What's that Love, feel what?

That you no longer want to drink, that you no longer need it, your angels have taken that desire away from you. Your wish has been granted by them, and it will last for the rest of your life on earth; however once you go to Heaven, then you'll have to start dealing with all the problems within you that have made you want to drink so much.

Are you an angel then Love... you sure talk like one. And you know... yeah, strange that you say

that, yeah, I think I do feel a bit different.

It won't happen all at once Bill, you'll need to readjust your mind, but within a few days you'll feel good about going and seeing that friend of yours.

Do you really think so Love? That would be good, I could do with a break.

You will Bill-

It's our train Sage.

Goodbye Bill. Have a good rest of your life, for it will be good. You're going to meet a very nice woman and she'll want to take good care of you Bill.

You don't say Sage... well blow me down - but I like all you say.

Bye Bill-

Goodbye Love, and God bless you...

*

Do you think Bill will be all right Sage?

Yes Tommy, he's not going to drink a drop ever again, he'll be a tea-totaler, and he'll go and fix the cars like he wants to do; and he's going to meet a younger woman, her car will break down and he'll pull over and fix it for her, and they'll start talking and never stop. She'll have two children with him, two girls, and they will love him, and one of them will remind him of me. The angels have it all worked out Tommy, it's all for him to have a good rest of his life, because he was ready for it. He had come to terms with the hopelessness he felt concerning his need to drink. He went with it, and he admitted that he loved it, and then he realised that he was powerless to stop, that he couldn't do anything to help himself, that he needed outside help, higher help; and so he was granted a stay on his drinking. But when he dies, all those needy feelings will start to come back to him, but he'll be in a better state because of all he experiences with his wife and his two daughters to deal with his problems. And she will keep helping him when she dies, and they will stay together for a little time in spirit; but then they will part amicably and go their different ways because their relationship will have run its course. Not many people Tommy stay together once they die, but some do, and for differing lengths of time.

Wow Sage, I love how you know so much. When you talk like that, it's like I'm watching the television, watching Bill's life.

Yes Tommy, that's how I see it, like I'm watching the movie. It's quite easy to do, I can tune into any part of it at any time and see what's going to happen then.

Can you do that with me and my life?

Yes, like some of the things I've told you. And because I'm close to you, it's very easy to do, I have to stop myself telling you about your life Tommy, it's all there like a movie moving before my eyes.

Can you tell me one more thing? I love hearing about it and wondering if it will happen as you say it will.

It will.

I write it down in my secret book.

I know Tommy. And I know where your secret hiding place is, and the angels, right the way through your life, are going to keep your secret hiding places, truly secret.

You mean so no one might discover them by mistake?

Yes, so even if someone were to discover it, they'd not see what was there right in front of their eyes.

Like my treasures would be invisible to them?

Yes, exactly.

Wow. So I don't have to hide them, then?

Yes you do, because it's your intention of wanting to keep them a secret is what the angels will be helping you with. God is allowing it to happen so they can. But if you just didn't care, and said: "I don't care anymore because the angels will keep them safe", then you'll lose their help.

Sage, we need more money, you gave it all to Bill, remember; do you think you should ask the angels for some again?

I don't ask them for anything Tommy; I never ask them to do anything. I just do what God wants me to do through my feelings. Look in your pockets again Tommy, and see what's there?

SHIT SAGE-

Sush Tommy, not so loud, you'll attract attention to us.

But Sage, LOOK!

Yes Tommy, how much is there?

Hang on and I'll count it... SEVEN HUNDRED DOLLARS SAGE - GOD, IT'S MORE THAN I'VE EVER SEEN IN MY WHOLE LIFE.

Keep one hundred for us to get what we want with, and the rest is for you Tommy, to keep in your secret hiding place.

Really, all six hundred?

Yes, you'll need money Tommy at certain times, and I'll make sure - that is, the angels will, as it's what God wants - that you'll have all you need.

What am I going to need it for?

Your mother is going to get sick, it's nothing serious, and she will need to see the doctor and won't have enough money, so that's what it will be for. So when it happens, you know that wallet we found, well, you can put in that and say you found it in the street.

Yeah, that sounds like a good idea. Righteo then, I'll do as you say... Look Sage, where here, this is Hastings.

Good.

*

Why did you want to come here Sage, I didn't ask you?

You'll see Tommy, more treasure hunting.

REALLY, FAN-BLOODY-TASTIC, I can't wait, what are we going to find - more gold?

Yes.

MORE GOLD! How much more?

You'll see, but you'll need a bag to carry it in, and it's going to be heavy, so we need to buy something in one of these shops...

What about this one Sage, it goes nicely over my shoulder, and it's on special, it's only thirty bucks.

Perfect Tommy, you buy it, I'll wait for you outside.

No worries...

Ok Sage, now what?

Something to eat and drink whilst I get my bearings... the pier is that way - is that right?

Yes, down that road over there, we can get something down there are the kiosk.

Ok, let's do that. Oh, and Tommy, you'll need something to write with, and a notebook, go into the newsagents and get yourself one.

Sure thing Sage, I'll be right back...

Here look, I like this one, it's black, and a black pen - is that what you want?

It's for you Tommy, and it's perfect; it's for you to write down things that you might want to remember.

Oh, you mean like what I can put in my secret book in case I forget all you tell me.

Yes.

Alright then, anything you want me to write - I can write while we're walking!

Yes, you can write this: The Blue Ones are for the boys; the Pink Ones are for the girls; and Green Ones are for Her.

What does that all mean Sage?

You'll see Tommy, then it will make sense.

Are we like detectives looking for stolen treasure?

Yes Tommy, how did you know?

HA! Your angels must have told me. I don't know, it just popped into my mind, when you was telling me what to write. I've always wanted to be a detective looking for stolen things... more gold, hee, hee, I like the sound of that Sage. You are my best friend Sage, no one else is nearly as

much fun as you are. So there's the kiosk, we can get fish and chips if you like.

Yes, and we'll get some extras to feed the seagulls and pigeons with.

And the sparrows too; you can't forget about em little ones... and those two magpies, see them in the park, they'll come over for sure.

Yes, all the birds Tommy.

*

Ah, this is good Sage, I'm so excited to be on another Treasure Hunt with you. I wish you didn't have to die, and we could grow up and be happy together. I'd marry you Sage, and we could go treasure hunting all the time, we could find a great hoard of gold and live happily ever after.

Kiss me Tommy.

SAGE, WHAT, HERE AND NOW, IN FRONT OF ALL THESE PEOPLE!

Yes, why not?

All right... he goes...

Thank you Tommy. I love it when you kiss me.

I love kissing you Sage, it makes me feel real good inside.

Oh you poor thing... look at that poor pigeon over there Tommy, his leg looks like it's in a bad state. Go over and pick him up and bring him over here.

Pick him up! He'll fly away. I've tried to catch them before, I wanted a pet pigeon but dad wouldn't let me; he said they shit all over the place and that he's got too much as it is to worry about without having to clean up all that mess; and that's why he let me have the fish, because they don't shit everywhere messing up the place.

Yes, well that one will let you pick him up if you go over and be gentle with him Tommy. Ask him if he will let you pick him up, as you want to have a look at his sore foot.

All right Sage, if say so, but I reckon he's going to fly away...

Here pidgy, don't be scared, I'm not going to hurt you, Sage says that if I ask you, you will let me pick you up, she wants to have a look at your sore leg. Pidgy, can I pick you up please, I promise I won't hurt you; I'll carry you over to Sage and then I promise I'll let you go again. I'd

like you to be my pet pigeon, but dad won't let me keep birds, and you'd probably feel better being free and the like; but your leg does look bad... there you go, you're a lovely bird... yes, that's it, you're a pretty boy pigeon aren't you... that's all right, isn't it, see, nothing to be scared of... you're a good pigeon... Wow Sage, look, he let me pick him up just as you said; look, he's so peaceful not struggling at all.

Yes Tommy, well done; as long as you're respectful and kind, he won't feel scared. Now let me have a look at his leg; you keep holding him... he likes you holding him-

He feels all warm, his feathers are so soft and smooth Sage... oh look, you can see, he's got something around his foot, like some fishing line or something.

Just hold him this way Tommy, over here so those people can't see what we're doing... yes, that's it... It's all better now, you can let him go Tommy...

Sage, did you see that! His foot just straightened up, it was magic, it was all bent and crooked and looked so sore; and now look at it - was that the angels again, healing it?

Yes Tommy, open your hands.

Alright, there you go now Pidge, you're all well, Sage fixed your foot for you, you can fly off now... There you go Pidge, you can fly off now... Sage, he doesn't want to go... look, he seems to like it on my hand... hey, he wants to walk up my arm... there you go Pidge, you want to go onto my shoulder, well that's all right, just don't shit on me or dad will kill me. Ha! Look at that Sage, he's sitting there going to sleep, oh it must have been so tiring for him having that sore leg all the time, he could hardly stand on it. Oh I can hear him making a slight cooing noise in my ear, oh what a beautiful bird. I wish I could keep him Sage.

Now Tommy, we have to get back to business, we can't stay here too long, as we've got to catch the last train back home.

Yeah that's right, okay... can we take the Pidge with us, he doesn't want to fly away?

Sure; if he wants to come. Now Tommy, over that way along the edge of the water, is there some sort of path in through those trees?

Yes Sage, it goes right around to that far point, it's a board-walk, you know, with the planks of wood up above the mangroves, and the water that comes in under it a high tide.

Good, because that's where we want to go.

Alright, let's go... hang on Pidge, we're going for a walk... it's over here Sage, see...

Yes Tommy, this is it, the picture that's in my mind. Now, we have to go along here for some way... and then we should come to a little bridge which has a large drain pipe under it, one which you could fit in and walk up.

You want me to go up the drainpipe Sage?

Yes Tommy, you'll be all right, and it's not very far inside, you'll be able to see all right, only a few spiders, nothing to worry about.

Spiders are nothing, I'm not afraid of spiders, no red-backs ever bothered me... could that be it over there Sage?

Yes. Now we have to make sure no one is looking.

All right, here Sage, you take Pidge on your shoulder, and I'll run ahead and see if anyone is coming... and we can see back there... there's no one following us.

Ok Tommy...

All clear Sage, so I'll go up the pipe - but what am I looking for?

About ten paces up you'll see up on the right another pipe, which you should be able to lean into, you might have to crawl in a bit, because inside it, up on the right again, will be something like brick that's been wedged or cut into the side of the pipe. I can't really get a good picture of it, but it will feel different to the normal side of the pipe, all rough and broken, not like the normal smooth pipe. It might even be where the two pipes meet, like they don't come together properly. I don't know, you'll have to see when you're in there. And you should be able to dislodge the brick or large rough piece of concrete, you'll have to make sure it doesn't fall on you; and then behind where it was should be a hole with a bag in it, and that's your treasure Tommy.

Great Sage, you beauty, I'll give it a go; if I can't do it I'll come back and see what you say. All right, here I go, seen you both soon, see you Pidge, I'm going looking for Treasure... AH SHIT!

What Tommy, what's the matter?

I can't do it, it looked easy, but I can't get down there to the big pipe entrance, there's a fence in those bushes blocking me on this side which you can't see from up here, and I can't climb over it. I'd have to go down on the other side, so we'd have to be over that side of the creek, or at least I would; and I can't get there from here - there's no way down, it's too steep. I mean, I might get down right enough, but I'd never get back up.

Hmmm, I see... alright then Tommy, we'll just have to go over there to that side.

But we can't Sage, it's too steep; and even if we managed to somehow, as I said, we'd never get back up.

That's all right Tommy - Kiss me again!

WHAT - KISS YOU, NOW, HOW'S THAT GOING TO GET ACROSS THERE?

Have faith Tommy. Now give me a big hug and a big kiss, hold me tight-

SHHHHHHHHHITTTT SAGE... HOW'D WE DO THAT? WHERE ON THE OTHER SIDE!!!

The angels Tommy, they carried us over.

WOW Sage! OH MY GOD, and how are we going to get back?

How do you think!

SAGE, WOW - WE FLEW, LIKE BIRDS SAGE, JUST LIKE HOW PIDGE DID - NEAT AS
- ALL RIGHT, I CAN'T WAIT TO FLY BACK!

Come on Tommy, you've got work to do.

Right Sage, I'm on it. I won't be long.

*

Sage, is the coast clear?

Yes Tommy, no ones about, how'd you go?

I FOUND IT SAGE, LOOK! The bag, just like you said - the rough side of the pipe where the two pipes met came away after I bashed it a few times with a rock that was in the big pipe - and this was inside the hole. Look, it's heavy, it was a struggle to lift it out, but it's all right now.

HA! Tommy, look at you, you're covered in dust and cobwebs. Here, I'll hold it while you brush yourself down... Alright now Tommy, put it in your carry bag and we'll have a look at what's inside it later. Do you know somewhere near here we could go that might be private, where no one will see us?

Yes, my brother showed me a secret place along here where other boys used to hang out, he said

they don't anymore because it's too boring now, but I liked the place - but we've got to fly back to the other side first!

Hug me tight, and kiss me Tommy-

Hold on Pidge... Here we go... WEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE - SHIT I LOVE THAT SAGE! No one would ever believe that, Tony would lose his mind if he saw us doing that.

What, if he saw us hugging and kissing? Come on Tommy, let's go...

You coming too Pidge... come on then...

*

It's not far, it's down by the water in amongst some trees, there's a little clearing with grass... and there should be a little path to it that's overgrown... yes, here it is...

Perfect Tommy, now let's see what's inside that bag.

All right, I can't wait. What do you think Pidge is in the bag? Look! Sage, LITTLE GOLD BARS... WOW - they've got marks on them... and they are heavy little things, I never knew gold was so heavy, that nugget was heavy, but not as heavy as these. There's twenty of them... gee, they look so good; and then there's this other little bag, I wonder what's in that... Look Sage, it's coloured glass beads, why would anyone want them stashed with their gold?

There not glass Tommy, they are gem stones; surely you've seen some like these before in jewellery shops. And they're very valuable, they are probably worth a lot more than the gold.

Really? Hey look, they are all blue, pink and green, just like you had me write in my book. There's so many of them - a good handful of each colour.

Yes, that's right Tommy, so do you know what it means what I told you to write?

No, what?

These blue ones are for your boys, they are called sapphires; and these pink ones, they are pink diamonds and very, very rare, they are for the girls; and the green emeralds will be for your wife. They will keep her happy, but don't tell her where you got them from, just say you dug them up and oh what a surprise; and don't tell her about what you'll give to your children Tommy - do you understand?

I'll write it now in me new book so I don't forget. So where did they all come from Sage, how

did they end up in that drainpipe - who put them there?

A man stole them from another man. He broke into the man's house and threatened to kill him and his wife if he didn't give the gem stones and gold to him.

So what if the man came back now looking for them, shouldn't we hide them and get out of here - it's a bit scary.

You've got nothing to worry about Tommy. The man who stole them is in prison, dreaming of the day when he gets out and can be reunited with his stash; but that's not going to happen now is it; and he won't get out of gaol for ten years, so you can relax, nothing is going to happen.

But shouldn't we give them to the police so the man he stole them from can have them back?

No, because that man stole them from the jewellery shop he worked in; and the owner of that store is now in spirit, and he's been here with the Sisters helping guide us to them. He's more than happy for you to have them Tommy, because he's been told what your children and yourself are going to use them for in future; and besides, they are not really of any use to him now that he is in Heaven, are they?

No... but what about his children - does he have children still alive?

Yes, however they have plenty of money and don't need those stones. You will need them more Tommy.

Okay then, so it's all right for me to keep them?

Yes, safe and secret.

Yes Sage, I will... I'll have to find a bigger hiding place!

And remember this too Tommy, you can write it also in your notebook, always keep your treasures hidden in the ground, and NEVER in a bank, because the bank will one day steal them from you if you do. But always leave good secret markers for you to find them in the ground because the ground can change, you might think it's easy to remember where you hid something, but when you go back a tree has fallen over, new plants have grown, all sorts of things might have happened, so you have to leave yourself good clues so you can remember. And if you do ever lose them, which I can't see that you will, but I might not have been shown everything, then I will guide you from Heaven as to where you left them.

Okay Sage, so you're going to be with me in Heaven my whole life?

Yes.

Wow, I'll like that. Can we still kiss?

Sometimes we will if you like.

I would like.

Yes, but you're going to be kissing other girls and women, too, Tommy-

Oh no Sage, I only want to be with you.

I know Tommy, but you can't, you've got other people you need to be with, because you will need to learn things from them.

Yes, so you said. All right then Sage, if I must I'll kiss those other girls, but secretly I'll be kissing you... Hey Pidge just flew up into the tree, goodbye Pidge, thank you for staying with me this long.

Come on Tommy, that's the sign, we have to go; so let's pack up, put them in your bag and we'll buy something to eat for the ride home.

Yeah okay... see ya Pidge, it was nice knowing you.

*

Sage, come with me before we go home while I stash our new treasures; I'll show where my hiding place is, it's not far, it's down by the creek in a hole I found.

Alright, but we have to be quick, as I told Doug and Cath I'd be back about now...

See, it's neat, isn't it? Our treasures should be right hiding in there... And I don't think the water will flood up here if the creek rises, it's never been higher than down there as long as I know.

Yes, it should be all right Tommy, and you'll be moving them soon anyway.

I will?

Yes, as you'll find an even better hiding place. The angels will show you when it's time.

So they are helping me too, even though I can't see them?

Yes, all the time, just like the nature spirits told you when they came to your pond.

I love the angels Sage.

Me too Tommy.

HEY LOOK, SAGE, UP THERE IN THE SKY OVER THOSE GUMS, IT'S A BIRD FLYING FAST... IT'S... IT'S COMING TOWARD US... IT'S A PIGEON... PIDGE, IT'S PIDGE!!! AND LOOK, HE'S LANDING ON MY SHOULDER... He's followed us, all the way from Hastings; wow Sage, look, it is him, that's the mark he had on his wing - WWOOWW! HOW'S THAT - YOU'RE SO COOL PIDGE.

He likes your shoulder Tommy.

Oh heck Pidge, how did you follow us? But you have to go, I can't keep you, dad won't let me.

He might Tommy if you tell him what happened, how he followed you from Hastings.

Do you reckon Sage?

Ask him.

Yeah okay I will. Pidge, are you a homing pigeon? Wow Pidge, you came all that way, and you knew where we'd be - how did he know Sage, how'd he know where we'd be, he just came flying straight in to us?

The angels Tommy, and nature spirits, they can talk to the creatures and make them do things like that. The creatures are like mini nature spirits in a way, sort of our version of them on earth, but they can't talk to us like the nature spirits can.

Wow Sage, it's such fun being with you; can I give you a kiss goodbye?

Yes, and I'll see you tomorrow Tommy, we can go riding again.

More Treasure to find?

No, not for a while.

Okay Sage, then I'll see you tomorrow. I'll take Pidge and see what dad says; I hope he says I can keep him. I'm not going to put him in a cage or anything, he can be free, to come and go and even fly all the way back to Hastings if he wants to.

See you Tommy-

Bye Sage.

Doug, I'm going for a ride to Tommy's Big Rock.

Is Tommy going with you?

No, his mum needed him to do things for her, she wasn't feeling too well. I'll be all right, nothing bad is going to happen to me.

Yeah all right Sage, when will you be home?

For dinner.

Ok, I'll tell Cath - have a good time.

Bye Doug.

*

Hello Sage, please sit down, the evening is lovely here at Tommy's Big Rock.

Yes; hello Esmerelda.

Sage, I have someone I want you to meet. She is like the Mother Superior of the Healing Angels, her name is Gizella, so I will leave you with her - is that all right with you?

Yes.

Hello Sage, as Esmerelda told you, my name is Gizella, and I have been waiting a very long time to meet you.

Hello Gizella, it's nice to meet you too.

Now, there are some things I need to discuss with you. You have progressed well my dear, very well, you are quite an exceptional young soul. And everything is running according to plan.

Tommy helped you find the Zarina Diamond-

Yes.

And you understand how special it is.

Yes.

And now that you have it you can begin your real work.

Yes.

And you know what that work is.

Yes.

Good. It's all been explained to you.

Yes.

And you have chosen Tommy to help you in all that you do.

Yes.

And you understand it will last six months from now; and then Esmerelda will come and get you, as it will be time to leave.

Yes.

And how do you feel about that, and everything else - are there any questions you'd like to ask me?

I feel very good; and no, I have no questions to ask you.

Good. So that about does it then. You are in very capable hands. I have seen all I need to see and I am very happy with all you have done and all you are now to do. Very well than Sage, enjoy the rest of the afternoon, and I will see you again when Esmerelda brings you to me. Goodbye until then.

Goodbye Gizella...

She's very pleased with you Sage.

Thank you Esmerelda, it's all your doing; thank you ever so much, I'd not have been able to do anything without your help.

We all help each other Sage, just as your turn will come to help other Sisters.

Yes, I understand.

So I too will leave you now; I'll be with you, but in the background. You know you only need to

call me and I will be right with you. You know now all you need to know, the rest you can pick up along the way.

Yes.

Good. I will speak to you soon.

Thank you again Esmerelda.

I was asking Ursula more about expressing our bad feelings to uncover their truth.

Yeah, Cath, what did she say?

It's very complex to understand Doug, the part of how our feelings are the gateway to hidden or deeper understanding within us is simple enough, but it's about that hidden truth, and how it comes to light, that I'm finding hard to understand.

She says we on earth are all conceived into sin and evil, and that because of that we're all wrong in how we understand virtually everything. And it's not just a matter of sinning, and being evil if you do bad things, and all that religious stuff, but that it's really about how we've been turned against ourselves so we can't express our true and natural selves. And because we're imperfect, or wrong in that, then we are living against, not only ourselves and each other, but nature, God - the whole universe. And that's what's wrong, our mind is full of erroneous beliefs, and so many of our behaviours are unloving, and that's all what is sinful and evil. So even if you're the kindest and seemingly the most loving person on the planet, it doesn't matter, because you've grown up in the wrongness. She says it's a rebellion against truth, but not just about truth as we understand, but a rebellion against the truth of ourselves; that being, who we are really are. And that we can't get to know ourselves, or anyone else for that matter, truly, because we're doing all we can to deny so many aspects of ourselves, all of which can be seen through the denial of our feelings, and mostly our bad feelings. She said that throughout our childhood we learnt how to stop paying attention to ourselves; which means, we were forced to stop honouring and expressing all our feelings. When the child falls over for example, and the parent says stop crying, it's all right, you haven't hurt yourself, and things like that, mistakenly thinking they are being loving and supporting the child; or else just down right unloving and angry with it for carry on about what the parent thinks is nothing, then that's where all the damage is done.

And we've all been subjected to so many of those unloving soul-destroying and personality-denying experiences when we were growing up; and they have all compounded, and are still within us needing to be worked through. We need to go back into them and bring out all the bad feelings we felt; and by doing so, it is then as if we are being the loving parents to ourselves, the ones we didn't get, and that then allows those aspects of us that were stopped from being properly expressed, to now be expressed. It's quite incredible all she talks about.

Did she know about all this when she was on earth?

No. She said she grew up in a large family, and had a large one herself, a couple of hundred centuries ago, and she was as ignorant about it all as we are, and as most people are. She thought life was generally what you made it, and if you tried to be as good as you could, then that was the best you could be. And naturally you loved your children and did what you had to do, just as everyone did, and of course you had your ups and downs, but that was about it.

She said it wasn't until many years after she came into spirit that she started to wonder if there might actually be more to life after all. She met many spirits who had all sorts of ideas about life, and more than what her religion provided her with, some of which intrigued her, and she wanted

to explore. And eventually it led her to understanding what she is telling us, this being the 'Hidden Truth' humanity has unconsciously always been looking for - which incredibly is nothing more than finding the truth of yourself through your feelings.

So, has humanity always been like this, or what... how has it all come about?

She said that long ago high spirits that were meant to be looking after humanity and seeing that its evolution and growth of truth was going along in the right way, decided that they didn't want to live according to God's Laws, and wanted to go it alone - basically that they wanted to be gods themselves. And then they forced and coerced humanity to follow them; which meant they caused people to want to be like they were, so believing we are gods, and that we can do as we please without needing to follow God or wanting to be like God is. So really they made us turn away from God; and now, all these years later, even though there are people supposedly loving and wanting to be at one with God and do God's Will, and all of that, they are still so messed around from their early childhoods that their lives with God are actually taking them further away from God, not bringing them closer, all because they are still rebelling against God.

So it's a rebellion against our Heavenly Mother and Father. And we're all living it unbeknownst to us; and that we don't have a clue, and are so far away from the truth and living true to ourselves, that even Jesus can come as he did all those years ago, tell us a bunch of truths, and all we do is take them, corrupt them, and make them and him be part of our wrongness by creating what we know of as the Christian faiths.

So none of those faiths or religious people are really doing any good for themselves?

No, the opposite, so far as advancing their soul in truth goes. They are all making it even harder for themselves, because when they start to pay attention to their feelings, and the ones they are rebelling against or rejecting, then their religious beliefs are going to make it even harder for them to let go and be true to themselves. So if they truly want to spiritually progress by uncovering the truth of themselves and their soul through their feelings, they are going to have to give up all that religious stuff realising that most of it is wrong and misleading and only causing them greater pain; and in a way, they have to start again so far as learning what being truly spiritual really is. So coming out of their minds and its strict controlling beliefs, and into the freedom of their feelings, uncovering the truth their feelings will help them see about themselves.

Shit!

Yes, and that apparently, people like us, who are not really anything religious or spiritual, yet are open minded enough to want to do something to help ourselves by looking to our feelings to lead us, are much more spiritual, and can be much more truly religious if we want to include God in it too.

And how do we do that - include God?

That apparently is even simpler. You just want to be with God, be God's child, which we are all anyway; so want to be the same as God is, so as perfect as God is. And that if you want to do that, then as you respect, honour, accept and express all your feelings, whilst looking for the truth of them, you are naturally living God's will automatically, so it's not really any big deal.

And she also said, which I want to talk more about with her as I don't fully understand it yet, that what Jesus really came to say - and by the way, it was both Jesus and Mary Magdalene, as apparently she was/is his soulmate and equal, only she didn't have a proper say like he did because of the work she had to do, she allowing herself to be subjected to more of the repression of the feminine. And this is how the rebellious spirits controlled humanity, by getting people to deny their bad feelings. And anyway, getting back to what Jesus and Mary really came to tell humanity, which the Christians don't even understand, is that we can long to God for Their Divine Love. And if we do that, then as the Divine Love comes into our soul, as apparently it will if we sincerely want to be at-one with God; and if we are looking to our feelings for their truth, then when we've purified a bit of our soul by liberating and seeing the truth of those bad feelings, the Divine Love will transform it from being of what we're born with, Natural love, into being of the Divine Love, so being just like God is - Divine. And if we don't long for the Divine Love, don't do our Healing through our feelings, and so never transform our soul, then we don't get to ascend to the higher spirit spheres where Ursula and the rest of the Sisters live. You stay confined to the lower worlds in spirit until you decide that you do want to be with God, and so start longing for Their Divine Love.

And that's all we have to do to be as spiritual as we can be; the two things: Long for the truth of our feelings as we express them all; and long for the Divine Love. So it couldn't be any simpler!

So how do you long for the Divine Love? And I thought we were already divine, that being why we are above animals - because we humans are God's children.

I know, I thought that too, but apparently it's not so, that's all part of the wrong teaching. So no, we are not divine, we are of the same natural love as the creatures; however we can become divine if we want to - however it's up to us to have to want to. And if we do, then we can long to God for Their Divine Love. And that's what is so amazing about our soul, that we do have the capability to actually leave being like a creature is, so moving on from being of the same Natural love, and becoming of the same higher love God is: Divine Love. And when you are divine, then you are at-one with God and living God's will, and being as spiritual and truly religious as you can be.

So you don't have to join a church.

Oh god no, that will only cause you more problems, it's far better if you are free like we are with not much understanding about it all, because we can just do what she says without too many difficulties. We only have to want to do the two things: to live true to our soul, which is the same

as living true to ourselves, which is honouring all our feelings as they come up and want them to show us the truth they want us to see about ourselves, life and God; and then want to be with God through the Divine Love; which, as I said, all sounds very simple.

Yeah it does, ha, ha, so simple; I mean, what could be simpler...

You don't think so? But it's nothing like what we've all been led to believe, which is of course all part of the problem, and which we've got to get ourselves out of.

So why don't we all know that stuff, if it's so easy?

Because the Evil Spirits that have controlled humanity for ages, have not wanted us to know, that's all part of the control.

And are they still controlling us?

No, that was part of what Mary and Jesus did by their coming, they stopped some of them; and the other ones have been stopped more recently, for other reasons which she said she couldn't talk about now. But it doesn't matter anyway, because humanity being in such a mess, and controlling itself so much, can get along fine in its rebellion against love, truth and God, without them. And so that's humanity's challenge: to wake up to how it's now controlling itself by passing on the control - parents to child; and ending that within ourselves.

And so if people haven't known about this, why is she telling us now?

It's all part of the changes that are apparently happening to humanity, changes on a spiritual level, of which Sage is a part, and why she can be as she is; and why through her Ursula can tell us about such things.

So these controlling higher spirits have really fucked us up... is that like Lucifer and Satan, and all that the churches go on about relating to the Devil?

Yes, they, and they also had partners, which we don't know about, are the culprits; and there were others too, but I can't remember their names.

And she said, Jesus didn't come into the world to save us from our sins, and by believing in Jesus doesn't automatically take all your sins and errors away, which I think is obvious; but anyway, he only came to tell us about the Divine Love and to stop these Evil Spirits, so we could then get on and heal ourselves. But as we didn't want to face the truth of our wrongness back then, so we got rid of him and kept Mary down, and have turned all they said against ourselves, causing us yet more problems - which is to be expected, because that's the only way we know to be. We're rebelling against them and God and ourselves, so how else can we be. We can't stop rebelling against ourselves until we heal ourselves of our own personal rebellion against the truth

of ourselves, and that's what each of us faces: to heal ourselves of our wrongness. And we can either start it now or do it when we get to spirit; but one way or another, we have to do it if we ever want to move up higher in the spirit worlds getting ever closer to being with God.

So it's a journey to God, you're talking about?

Yes, and a process to do your Healing, as she calls it. God wants us to experience what it is like denying Them - going away from God by denying the Truth and Love. And once we've experienced all we've needed to in our unloving state, then God wants us to heal ourselves of being wrong, untrue and unloving, so we can experience what it's like being the other way: being truly loving, true, and going toward God.

So God's the real culprit in all of this?

Yes, They have to be, because it's all what God wants.

So why did They want us to be unloving in the first place, and to suffer so much?

I don't know exactly, and neither does she. However she says all the higher spirits agree it's all for our good; and that's just how it is, and there is nothing we can do about it - other than try and uncover the truth of all we're feeling. And when we understand, we can start to do something about our unlovingness, by looking to heal ourselves through our feeling acceptance. Our feelings are the key - she continually stresses that, and not our mind. She says the problem has been, which is all part of the Rebellion, that we think, the way out of our pain and suffering, is by using our mind. Yet when we do that, we're only making things worse for ourselves, because we keep adding more erroneous beliefs. People who believe they can use their mind to make themselves feel happy and be loving, are going the wrong way, because they will only make themselves be more unloving and unhappy. Our minds have been used right from the beginning of their formation to go against so many of our feelings, so we are able to convince ourselves, and then pretend, that we are all right, and are even loving, when really we're not.

Yeah well, I can see that... yeah, I do it myself.

I know, me too; you have a pain and you push it aside telling yourself that it doesn't matter, as you're busy needing to get things done. So you can't just stop and feel how bad you feel every moment, because if you do, you're afraid you'll fall in a heap and never get going again - that's how I am.

Yeah, I now what you mean.

And that's all what's wrong with us, because that pain, any pain, physical, emotional, mental, even apparently spiritual - any pain, is the warning sign that something is not right and you need to

stop and pay attention to it.

Yeah, but who can stop work every time you get a pain or feel a bit bad, you'd never get the work done.

Yes, and that's all part of our problem; we have to stop doing all that, work differently, without needing to get the job done being the most important thing for us; and instead, focusing on ourselves making our own feelings be the most important thing... which I like the sound of - it makes a lot of sense. However as you say, to stop being as we are, I can't see that happening, we're too much of it, we don't know how to be another way.

Yeah, and if all of humanity were to suddenly agree to stop being as we've been for thousands of years, and then agree on a new way of being, and we all go down that road... I can't see that happening.

I know, and it's not going to happen, not that way.

So, how is it going to happen?

I don't know, one person at a time trying to accept all their feelings - I guess.

Argh, the enormity of it is too overwhelming.

I know; as she says, we're so far away from the truth, so heavily cemented in our wrongness; however she says it's got to start somewhere - the Healing of humanity.

I think I'd rather just keep my head buried in the sand, what with all of this and Sage, it's hard enough as it is.

But that's the whole beauty of it Doug, you don't have to do anything other than what you're doing, only you can also long to God for Their Divine Love, and start paying more attention to your feelings, longing for the truth of them. That's what it all boils down to, as far as I can see, and I don't see that being too difficult. We're already doing half of it by our wanting to speak about our feelings to each other as much as we can, and wanting our feelings to take us back into ourselves and see how we've come to be as we are; and I like the idea of praying to God for Their Divine Love, so why not... what do you reckon - do you want to try and live this way?

...Yeah... yeah all right - why not? We can give it a go, and see what we feel about it.

That's right, that's all we can do; and if we don't like it, we can stop, it's not like we're going to be punished by God if we don't keep going with it - all that will happen is we'll be as we are... and we can't get any worse than we are; and as we're both relatively happy with how things are now,

they can only get better - surely?

I hope so, it's all sounds good... but-

Yes I know, I get that feeling too, of: But what are we getting ourselves into? Yet still, then again, as soon as I think that, I like the idea of it all.

I really like that you don't have to be part of anything, that we can just do this together Cath, that's what's very appealing to me.

Me too; we don't have to join a church or believe in Jesus and get religion or anything like that, we can be just who we are - it's no big deal.

God that makes me feel so good, I can't tell you Cath. I've always wondered about the religious stuff with a sort of dread that what if those people are right, they always seems so self-assured about it all. And I've wondered, will I have to become like them one day, talking quotes from the Bible all the time, going door to door trying to convert other people. It all repulses me so much; but as I said: What if they are right and that's how you are meant to be? And now, the sheer blessed relief; and you saying they are wrong, and even making things worse for themselves; well, that certainly let's me off the hook and I feel great; and that you can be spiritual and religious and don't have to leave your own home - what more could I ask for!

What was it that made you hate the religious stuff so much?

I was forced to go to church when I was young, and god I hated it. It was so boring, sitting there in chapel listening to the old fart droning on and on about stuff I didn't understand. I hated it, dreaded every Sunday, being dragged along by mum and dad, it was the worse thing; and I was so happy when I got older and they said I could choose if I wanted to go to church or not, and said no. And then funnily enough, they both stopped going too, so what was all that shit, just putting me and themselves through misery because they believed it was good for me?

See Doug, that's all part of our wrong parenting. Yes, subjecting you and themselves to something they only believed with their mind was the right thing to do, and yet had they actually followed and lived true to their feelings, they'd not have done it. The belief was so strong in them, that they put themselves and you through torture each weekend making you all feel bad, when it was so unnecessary.

Yeah, well, the only good that's come of it that I can see, was I knew I hated the Church and religion, and didn't want to have anything further to do with it. **AND I WAS RIGHT!**

I feel so GOOD Cath; that I never have to go back to church - I never have to go into another church for as long as I live. I never have to go into the torture chamber ever again, I've been permanently let out - YIPPEE! And not only that; and this is the best part, that I'm not stopping

myself being spiritual or being with God or anything like that by not going to church. And that I'm being even more truly spiritual and with God by staying away from church. God I feel good - thank you Mother and Father for letting me off the hook, I no longer have to go into one of these Goddamn awful dreary soul-destroying places, and I can be with You both just here in my own home; home being my church Cath - our church.

It's really yourself who is your own church.

YES THAT'S RIGHT - wow, I like the idea of that! I am my own church, so I can drone on all day long telling myself what's right and wrong, and I don't even have to listen to myself-

You've got some serious issues there Doug.

I know, and I can set to, working them out with you Cath, just you and me, and no one else. Oh the glory of it, Glory be to God, it's wonderful, I am FREE, it's such a good feeling; and THANK YOU Cath and Sisters and Sage - all the beautiful women in my life - I am a lucky man!

Ursula was saying that the suppression of the feminine is where all our problems lie. That it's all become so heavily masculine with men physically dominating women and not allowing them to have their say, which is really the say of their feelings. And that women, if they are true to themselves and started to stand up and honour all they feel, all so long as they also want to use those feelings to uncover the truth of themselves, will lead men out of their wrongness. But women who want to stand up honouring their feelings, yet not wanting to use them to see the deeper hidden truth of themselves, of what's wrong within them and why, are just being like men are, still using their mind to deny themselves the truth of why they are feeling what they feeling; which is really what so many of the feminists are about. And being that way is not going to make them feel good if they ever understand they are only buying into more of the wrongness by trying to be men's equals in a mind way; and that really, we women have to go the other way and into ourselves and the truth of our feelings, if we are to really liberate ourselves.

So it doesn't matter what we do, because whilst we're untrue and wrong and believing we're right, we're going further in the wrong direction?

Yes, further against ourselves, just using our minds more to deny more of our bad feelings; or rather, the truth those bad feelings are to show us. It's all about the truth Doug, whether you want to know it or not; so whether you want to know how and why you are wrong, or whether you want to keep going along ignorant of it.

Yes, I see Cath; gee, you've got a good understanding of it all, and so quickly.

It's as if I've been waiting to hear this all my life Doug. Everything Ursula says just makes such perfect sense. It goes into me and I think about it, and nothing feels bad; and I feel really good

understanding it all. And I love the idea about using our feelings to see what's really going on it us, it's brilliant, and I can't understand why people don't know about it, why we're not all doing it, why were weren't taught about it as children; but as she says, that's all part of the evilness we've all been subjected to, to keep us ignorant of it and to keep us away from ourselves by making us believe all sorts of incorrect things, all of which are meaningless and only end up making us feel worse.

I mean, Doug, what could be easier: I feel bad, so I stop and pay attention to that bad feeling. I allow myself to feel it as much as I can. And if you are with me, and willing to listen to all I want to say about all I feel, then I can share it with you; I can emote my pain or anger or whatever, to you, as I long to know why I am feeling bad. And that's all I have to do, the rest all takes care of itself. When I am ready to see the truth, up it just comes naturally within me; and at the same time, so Ursula says, my soul will make the necessary inner adjustments in me so as to change that part of me on whatever level within me, from being dysfunctional into being functional; and slowly I will change getting better and becoming truer and more perfect, healing myself of my wrongness, evil, sin, imperfection - whatever, you want to call it. So that's what I want to do, and I assume you are willing to listen to me when I feel bad. So I feel like I'm on my way, I've started to do my Healing and I am starting to move in the direction of being with God, rather than keeping on going away from God. And I'm going to try this longing for the Divine Love and see what happens there; and if you want to do that too Doug, we can do that together as well.

Sure, I'll give it a go. Do you have to do anything to prepare yourself for doing it... I mean like believe in God or anything or-

No, you only have to want to receive God's love, the Divine Love, into your soul. That's it, to be at-one with God that way, through love, God's love; and to as perfect as God is. So that sounds good enough to me.

Yeah - why not. I like the idea of that too. Ok, so when do we start?

What about now?

Yeah? All right. So are we to imagine like we are in church and pray - do we have to get on our knees, because that part I cannot do, I hated that. And do you have to close your eyes and put your hands together; you know, like you're praying?

I don't know Doug, I think you just do whatever it is you feel you want to do.

Well I don't want to do anything like that, anything that reminds me of being in church I don't want to do.

All right then, we'll just sit here together and long to God for Their Divine Love. How's that...

I'm going to close my eyes because it helps me concentrate.

Yeah all right; I'll do that too. And do we long out loud, or in our minds?

Ursula said the longing you do is without words, it's done with feelings from your heart. You want to be loved by God, so like a child you reach out wanting to be with God, so you long to Them with your heart for Their Divine Love. She said you can support your feeling-longing with words from your mind, but it's all done on the feelings level. Mental prayers alone don't work - apparently God doesn't hear them.

Ok. I'm going to try doing it silently; as you say, you long to God for Their Divine Love. Here goes...

*

So how was it for you Doug?

Good Cath, really good, I'm surprised actually - and you?

Yes, very peaceful, very nice, I can definitely do with more of that feeling.

Yes, it was nothing like what I was thinking it would be like. I think I thought that God would suddenly start speaking to me, telling me that I'd been a bad boy for not attending church; but once I'd pushed all that shit aside, like the feeling-denying person I am, then I just said to myself and to God: na, fuck it, I'm going to do this God how I want to do it - is that all right with You? And as I didn't hear Them say, no, it isn't - I didn't hear anything, so I kept going my own way. I said to Them: Cath and I are sitting here Mother and Father longing for Your Love, the Divine Love as she says it's called, and so that's what I want, please: Can You please love me with Your Divine Love, can you put it in my soul... and whilst I was saying that prayer in my mind, I longed for it with all my heart. Then I started to feel, nice warm sort-of feelings, and like an energy was coming into me. My head wanted to rise up as if I was looking up into God's face, and I felt like something was coming into me. I NEVER felt anything like that in church. And if all those other people did feel that, then they didn't convey that to me; and if they really did feel it, then I sure missed out. How about you Cath, what did you do?

I longed for the Divine Love with all by heart, too. That part I found a little difficult to begin with because suddenly my mind started jumping in wanting me to say this and that, and thinking, is this right or wrong, should I do this or that, be this way or that, sit straight or just be slumped, say it this way or that, and on it went for a while. But then like you said, I pushed it aside getting angry with it, and said NO, I'm just going to long and not say anything, so I did just that. I longed to Them for Their Divine Love, and then like it was for you Doug, I felt a nice feeling in me, in my heart, sort of warm and comforting, however only a little bit like I was being loved by

God, but still it felt good. So I feel very happy about that.

Good, so that's another thing we can do together Cath.

Yes, I'll look forward to that.

Just think Cath where this might all end-

That I can't think about Doug, I wouldn't have the foggiest.

But what I mean is, we're on our way to somewhere. Of course we don't know where, but that's the feeling it's giving me; we're on our way on an adventure, and we have no idea where we are going, but it's an inner adventure one can go on without having to actually or physically go anywhere - and that I find very appealing.

Is sounds good to me, too. So we don't have to go climbing the highest mountains in search of enlightenment, or anything like that, we can do it in our everyday life, right here and right now.

Yes! Ah, it's such a relief to know that I don't have to belong to any religion to live religiously and with God and Their Divine Love, or to work on ourselves to heal ourselves of all our shit. God, what a relief!

You know I can still feel some of that good feeling...

Do you want to pray some more for Divine Love?

Yes; why not.

Alright, let's do it.

Esmerelda, how am I to use the diamond?

It will all come naturally to you Sage. It will show you itself, you don't have to worry about that. You are to keep it on you, but hidden, no one must see it or know about it, and we angels will work using it at times to convey certain light through it. Crystals, and especially that beautiful diamond, are conveyers of light, they amplify our spiritual light helping the light come into the material realm. We can also do it without them, but they made it easier. As long as they are in the vicinity, we can use them, you won't have to actually physically use it Sage, you won't have to touch anyone with it or hold it, or anything like that. It is part of our secret heritage, but up until now, such wondrous natural creations of the earth have been misused by humans - however this one is now yours.

Couldn't you just materialise them yourselves, as you need them?

Yes, and we have done at times, but there's still nothing like the original earth-made ones, they hold the material resonance of earth within their lattice structure, and that's what we work with.

So really people shouldn't use the gems for jewellery?

No, they should be respected for being what they really are, transmitters of light from our world to yours, and used so that we can have access to them so as to help you in your lives. Humanity was created to live with our help, you are meant to all be helped, and even openly, by us of the angelic realms, however that all stopped when humanity Fell with the start of the Rebellion. When that terrible time happened, we were forbidden to help you as we had done. Some of our number fell too, helping the evil spirits work their control upon the world, however none of those fallen angels are negatively influencing humanity anymore, they have all been dealt with and have all repented for their wrong doing.

It's so beautiful.

Yes, and very rare; there have never been many such large diamonds produced by the earth.

I love looking it into it, I feel like I could look into it forever; and I want to go in, Esmerelda, sort of be taken into it.

It's a small gateway into our world Sage, that's what you are yearning for, you wanting to be with us.

Yes, I do, I don't like being here on earth; I want to come and be with you.

We know, and soon, but first you must complete all you are to do, because that will help you understand how you can be with us. For as you understand, you can't be with us until you reach

the higher spirit levels, so whilst humanity is in rebellion against us and the truth, no one can be with us. And it won't be until as spirits when people have fully healed themselves, that we will all be able to work together. And for you now Sage, you will need to do this work as part of the preparation for when you do your healing through your feelings.

I understand, and I know I have to be here; and there are some good things, it's not all bad - I love being with Doug, Cath and Tommy, and Ruth is all right too in her way. But still, it's all so gross, nothing is very nice, and none of it gives me the really good feelings I get when I'm speaking with you and being with you in my dreams.

There is so much darkness on earth Sage, that is what you are feeling.

Yes, and I hate it, I don't want to be part of it. I want to be in the Light with you.

I know.

I want to end all the pain, I want to take it all away; I don't like it when I feel bad or when I see anyone else feeling bad.

I understand, however for some people it's necessary they feel all their pain because it will help them to understand more about themselves when they come to see the truth of their pain. So they need the pain so as to find the truth, it all being round the wrong way because of the rebellion against truth.

So who am I to heal? Shouldn't everyone be left in their pain if it's so good for them?

Not everyone, most, but some will need temporary relief from it, like Micky, so they can do other things with their lives, things they couldn't do when they are in such pain. But as you understand, that pain will still be there in their soul, and one day they will have to return to it and bring it up and out of themselves, all so they can see what truths it has hidden in it for them.

Yes, I understand.

I will guide you Sage. Many people will ask things of you, and some of those things you will be able to do; others not, and that's just the way of it. It's God's Way, and there's nothing any of us can do, because God wants it as They want it, and for all the reasons They know that will help people; for in the end, everything is for the best, even if at the time it might seem like the worst. Everything is not what it seems, there is good in the bad, and the bad is only temporary, the bad will one day cease to exist at all, and then there will only be good. However for the time being, it's very necessary for people to experience the bad. It will help them in their far off future when they've healed all their bad, being able to help others who feel bad themselves.

Thank you Esmerelda, thank you again for everything, I have to go now.

I'm with you Sage, all the time, and in everything you do. I love you Sage.

You see Cathy, you are what you've been formed into, if I can put it that way, through your childhood, and mostly your early childhood; and then, that's that, you're fixed in the ways of yourself, and it's very difficult to change them.

So Ursula, it's like I've formed and grown up as a tree, let's say, and I am forevermore that tree... but if that's the case, then how is what you're telling me about my Healing going to help me? How are we to change if we're already fully formed? And what about a crippled tree, how can it correct itself?

Although you might for all intents and purposes, keep looking like the same tree, as you work your way through your bad feeling acceptance, uncovering the truth you are to see about yourself, you will actually change and grow; and eventually, by the time you've finished your Healing, have changed into another tree. You'll still be the same tree on the outside, but a very different one on the inside, and it's all about the inside, attending to the inner you, which is the real you - the feelings you.

I understand that, so we as adults are really just the same children we were?

Yes, only because you've grown up into an adult and mostly have forgotten what you were like as a child, so you wrongly believe you are something different to how you were as a child. And being an adult, as you attend properly to your feelings, your feelings will connect you back with yourself as the child, all so you can see, as an adult, that which you couldn't see as a child, all that happened to you to make you be as you are.

That's quite incredible.

Yes, amazingly so; and it's the only way people can truly help themselves, all the rest is just moving stuff around within your already fixed childhood nature. So all the so-called self-help instructions and advice, and all the therapy people undergo, which does help people become more aware of certain aspects of themselves, is still really only working within the wrongness, it's trying to make the wrongness suit you better so you can feel happier in it; however it's not being completely determined to look at ALL your wrongness and doing whatever it takes to accept all the bad feelings to do with it.

How long is it going to take Doug and I to do our whole Healing?

I don't know... that is to say, I do know actually, however I'm not allowed to tell you. It's going to take some time, there is a lot you will have to understand about yourself, all to do with your early relationships and how they made you feel.

Just look at a young child growing, each day certain things make it feel good and other things make it feel bad, and for some children, there's a lot of time each day spent feeling bad - others a lot of time feeling good. And all that good and bad is intertwined, and it all has to be worked

back through. So all that is truly good and not what I'd call, false-good, is kept; and all that is bad and has pretensions of being good, goes away, which happens as you express it all out of you.

But the key to it is wanting to express it all out of you - and wanting to see it all: facing the truth of what comes to light. You've got to be willing to bring it all up and out, so you can see it and face it and accept that it is you - that yes, this is really how I am feeling. And then as you do that, you are increasing the awareness and understanding of yourself, of why you are the way you are, and that is all the truth coming to light. And along the way as each bit comes up within you, based on how it makes you feel, you decide whether or not you want to keep being as you are, and so naturally, you'll want to get rid of all the bad stuff and keep all the good.

But the whole thing is, and this might be hard to understand, that you yourself, other than deciding whether or not you want to keep being as you are, don't - because you can't - actually do anything else to change yourself. So you simply keep accepting how wrong you are right the way through until you've seen and accepted it all, that this is the rotten, ugly, horrible, evil truth of myself, and you don't even try to make yourself not be it; you allow yourself to be the nasty, unloving, evil person you are, seeing it and feeling how being it makes you feel; which won't be too good, but you keep going accepting all those feelings and wanting the truth of them. So you don't try to fix or change yourself, you just accept how you are feeling. And then when you've seen the truth your feelings are to show you, which can happen at any time throughout your Healing, the causes of those bad feelings will be removed by your soul and your angels, and that's it, you are no longer as you were. And your whole system adjusts, and gradually you come to realise that you are changing, that you are no longer the bad person you were. And then one day, when the BIG DAY finally arrives, you know with all your heart; and so, with all your truth, that you are no longer evil, no longer wrong, and that your Healing is over, you've been completely transformed into being a true person.

So you see it's a process, so something that takes time because you need things to happen to make you feel bad; and you need time to express and work through all your bad feelings; and you need time for your whole system - you - to adjust to all the changes; and that is your true spiritual growth, because you are growing in the truth of yourself - do you see what I'm saying?

So the whole key to it, which is what you are saying, is that we are to become our true and perfect self?

That's right. It's as though something was put into you that's not meant to be there, it's making you be imperfect - false and untrue, and so it all has to come out, which you do by expressing all your feelings. And when all the bad feelings have come out, then you'll be left with the true and perfect you, that you which would have come naturally into being had it not been interfered with.

So you want to be true. And you ask God, your Mother and Father, to help you express all your bad feelings and to see the truth They want you to see. And then you just focus on expressing your feelings however you can; so to someone if you have someone who is wanting to listen to all you want to say, all the bad, yuk, stuff; or you write and say to yourself how you feel; and of course tell God all you feel.

So you stay focused on your feelings, you keep expressing all they are making you feel, and you

long for the truth of them, and that's all. You don't have to make yourself go deeper into them, that will naturally happen, and you don't have to do anything with your mind. You just keep trying to articulate all you feel, accepting those feelings, feeling how bad or good they make you feel, express all the emotions associated with them, and long for the truth they are to show you.

And in doing that, all the bad or wrong parts will slowly come out of you; and by liberating them, so too are you setting yourself free of them. And as I said, your soul then affects the necessary changes when all the pain has come out and the truth of it has been seen, and that is your Healing. And slowly you will perfect yourself, become true, start having good, loving, open, honest and truthful relationships, with your partner, if they are also doing their Healing, and then with everyone else. And most importantly, with yourself.

Yes, it all makes sense, and the picture is building in me, one of understanding it; and I'm enjoying it, it makes me feel like I'm getting somewhere.

However, mostly it's still only that you are expanding your mind with all that I am telling you; and that is all right, in so far as it is also what has to happen, for your mind needs a picture with which to relate to, however your true growth can and will only come every time you embrace your feelings looking for the truth of them.

Ah right, I see what you mean.

Good, because a lot of people and spirits make that mistake, that because they are filling their mind with new things and their understanding is growing, they believe they are also spiritually growing, but they aren't. And depending on what they are filling their mind with, might even mean they are going further into their darkness, becoming even less spiritual, more tainted and more untrue, just as those people who follow the Eastern gurus and the religious leaders are doing, because such so-called spiritual leaders are leading their adherents and followers the wrong way.

So none of them are doing what they actually think they are doing?

No, so far as making any true or real spiritual progress. No, they are only advancing their minds, which they believe is the way to God - God through the mind; however it's only through your feelings that you actually become at-one with God. And NOT through your mind. They believe it's by transcendence through using the mind, when it's not, it's by ascending in truth gained through your feelings. Anything that is helping you dismiss, transcend, or 'rise above' your feelings, is only serving to further deny yourself, taking you further away from the very truth you are seeking, that which can only, and will only, come when you are fully accepting all you feel.

Golly, all those people, billions of them, and all going the wrong way.

Just as you and Doug were; just as is everyone on the world who is not properly attending to all

their feelings for their truth.

And how many people are doing that?

About a handful, and not very well at that, because they don't understand all I'm telling you.

Gee, so Doug and I are very lucky.

Yes you are. However it's who you are, your soul being ready and able to cope with it, as is your mind and yourselves generally, which is also why you are the custodians of Sage.

How are you feeling Sage, you don't feel left out by my talking to Ursula via you like this?

No Cathy, not at all, it's easy to do and I like hearing what she has to say; it's helping me too, to slowly understand it all. And as she's speaking with you, I can speak with her, too, so it's like having two conversations going on at once.

That is incredible Sage, don't you get confused?

No, it's like there are two phone lines open and I'm using both of them. I have to stop at times to concentrate on what she's saying to you, but if I know what it's about, as we've been over it before, then I can tune out and speak to her myself. It all happens very fast, sort of like flashing thoughts to each other, so it's not really with words that I need to speak with her, just thoughts. I get what she's saying before the words are all spoken, so there's no need for me to say them all.

Fascinating. Do you mind if I keep going, asking Ursula things?

No, I enjoy it, it feels good when she's speaking to you through me, it's a very nice feeling - I feel happy.

Oaky then; so Ursula, what's it really all for, what's the main purpose of our doing our Healing?

Well, other than to make you feel happy and pain-free and loving, and other than to rid yourself of all your wrongness and living against God and your own soul, it's to bring you to a level of perfection; which means, of expressing your whole self (which is really your whole personality), truly and fully to another person. To be able to have a truly loving relationship with another person, and ultimately, with your soulmate. If you're not wholly expressing every aspect of yourself, then you can't have full loving relationships with yourself or anyone else. So that's what it's *really* all about: to be able to relate properly to another person. And as you do that, fully expressing all you think and feel, then so too do you understand yourself, your whole personality and soul. And, as you understand yourself, so too do you understand God. So that's really what it's all about.

So soulmates are real and not just a fantasy of ourselves - our wishful thinking?

Oh they are very real, only you'll not be able to have the true loving relationship with your other half until you've healed yourself of everything that's stopping you from having it.

I see, so these people who believe and feel they have found their soulmate-

Are only deluding themselves. They can't possibly know if the other person is their soulmate, or for that matter, isn't their soulmate, until they've completely healed themselves - like I've been telling you. It's not possible to know and relate truly to your soul-partner until you yourself can relate truly to yourself. So whilst you're denying but one bad feeling, not fully acknowledging or expressing it, so too will you be denying your soulmate union. However, you might even be with your soulmate, but you'll never really know until you are both fully healed. You might even be using your soulmate to further your wrongness, so having a very bad relationship with them, the most unloving one you could imagine - two soulmates completely rejecting each other, yet you won't know that either until you've done your Healing.

So a lot hinges on our having done our Healing?

Yes, because then it will all make sense; yet whilst you're in the nonsense, you can't make head nor tails of it. It is nonsensical, because it's false - untrue.

So really from what you've said, there's no point even worrying about whether someone is or isn't your soulmate, until you've finished your Healing?

That's right.

But why do some people feel so connected with the other person, and so 'in love', and so much, that they are soulmates?

Because their negative patterns gel with each other more than anything they've experienced, so wrongly they believe it's true love, but really they are only getting along very well in their wrongness. Most people want their partner to be like them, so when they are, or when they believe they are, so they believe they've found their soulmate. And in fact you are much better off with someone you don't really love that much, but can express all you feel too, all so you can help each other to find the truth of yourself through your feelings, leaving all the love fantasy stuff out of it.

That's hard to do, though.

HARD! My dear girl IT IS ALL HARD, AND THE HARDEST THING YOU WILL DO IN

YOUR LIFE, other than all you've already been through during your childhood - which was the hardest and worst for you. So the good news is, you've lived the horrors of your unloving childhood, it's been done, and now you can heal all the pain and address all the wounds - now you can truly end it. And if you don't want to do that, then you'll keep living expanding your wrongness, feeling worse and worse about yourself, even though of course, you'll have to work harder and harder using your mind to convince yourself that you're feeling better and better.

So what we call love - is it really love?

Well it is, in so much as it's what you are feeling, however the truth of it might be debatable. Most people believe they are loving and feel loved; however, as you understand, that's all within an unloving system - so is that true love or false love?

Is what you perceive, and so feel love to be, that which is entirely based on your biased beliefs you developed through your childhood, real and true? And these are the sorts of things you will find out for yourself through your Healing: What is the truth of love? And so, is that love you are feeling - true.

And you see Cathy, it's all to do with truth; if you have no truth, then the love you feel is questionable; however if you are all truth, then the love you feel is true. So love is what you want it to be whilst you're living in your untrue mind-controlling states. If you feel love from your mother who is still unloving because of her anti-love condition of mind and will, then that is how you will perceive love to be. And so from her and your father, and other early carers, your perception of love builds from conception right the way through your childhood and into your early twenties, so there is a lot to what constitutes that which you relate to as love. So people can say they love someone, or themselves, when in fact, they don't, with their behaviour belying their beliefs; or supporting it, making the falseness of their claims harder to see.

Every person and spirit has to look into themselves to find out through their feelings if what they feel is love, really is, true love. And if it is, it will remain; if not, it will go; and it's the falling away of our false love, love based on the errors and controlling beliefs of our mind, that is one of the most incredible things about our Healing. To live believing you love your spouse for so many years having all your children together, happily growing old together, thinking you can't live without this person because you love them so much, only to arrive in your new spirit life to find that your husband or wife whom you believed loved you as much as you loved them, but who died before you, is now with a new partner loving them seemingly even more than they did you, certainly puts the wind up you.

Is that what happened to you Ursula?

Yes my dear, it did. He had a younger woman on his arm, and I was shocked and hurt, heartbroken to the depths of my soul. I had thought we'd live on for eternity, for that's what we married for, even though I didn't really think there was an afterlife; but you know, I dreamed and fantasied that there'd be one, and we'd still be together, young again, like it was when we first met, and with all our family, one big happy whole. But no, that wasn't for me, which turned out for

the best, because I had to carry on entering into a new relationship myself, which helped me question my so-called 'great love' I had for my husband. Which with time and more experience (I was only ever with him), I came to see that I'd been living nothing more than a fantasy. So I'd contrived the whole love thing in my mind, and was living out that fantasy all those years; and my god, was that a big shock and awakening! And when you experience something like that, it knocks you right down, and it's hard to pick yourself up and get going again. And I wasn't the same ever again, which was the shock I needed to make me start facing the truth of myself: the truth of my love; of what I knew love to be - or thought I knew to be.

Yes, I can see, that would be a huge shock.

It was, I can tell you, but it was the start of my 'Awakening'; and since then I've come to see just how many people on earth and in spirit delude themselves about the truth of their relationships; which is understandable, because if they were true to their real deeper hidden feelings, they'd not have the relationships they have.

So we're all desperately clinging onto the love we believe we feel, which might turn out to be untrue - false?

Yes.

That's a very sobering thought.

I know, especially when you are, as I can see, applying it to what you feel about Doug. And it's right, my love, that you question it; it all has to be questioned. And if it's right for you, it will keep going; and if not, it will end. Such is life: *c'est la vie*.

Yes, I guess so. But how can I know if I am deluding myself when all I feel is so much love for him, I've never felt like this with anyone before; and now with the twins, I feel it even more intensely growing every day.

You can't know if you are deluding yourself. Certainly in some aspects of it you will be, but as to how much, will only come to light through your Healing.

So what happens if we set off doing our Healing, as you are suggesting, only to discover that we don't actually love each other after all - that we've been making it all up?

Then you separate.

However you and Doug won't separate Cath, you don't have anything to worry about concerning separation.

How do you know Sage; and is that right, Ursula?

I don't now Cathy, she's getting that from Esmerelda.

I see.

And the angels are a league unto their own. They know infinitely more than we do, we're not privy to such information; and if we are, it comes from them, we're not advanced enough to know such things for ourselves.

So Sage, is that what Esmerelda is saying?

Yes.

So she's here too?

Always; she's always listening and involved in all we do in one way or another. And she's saying that she can't forward too much information to your Cathy, for various reasons, which she can't as yet tell you about-

Why not, why can't she tell me-

Because it would interfere with things you are to go through; and for the moment, that sort of interference is not warranted by your soul.

So she knows what my soul wants?

Yes, she has access to all she needs to have about us, which amounts to virtually everything - that's what she's saying.

Cathy, wait until you are over here in spirit working with the angels like we are, then you'll understand.

All right Ursula.

So can I believe her Ursula?

Yes, she won't be telling you something that's untrue, because you are now looking for the truth.

And if I wasn't trying to be true; she, our angels, might tell us things that are untrue?

Yes, if it's what you need to take you further into your wrongness.

I see; there's always so much more than you'd think.

Much more Cathy.

So Esmerelda, you reckon Doug and I will hang in there?

Yes Cathy, you will have some hard times together, however they will only be short lived, because you both will be attending to your feelings, looking for their truth. You will remain together right to the end of your time on earth, and you will help your children grow up showing and allowing them to honour and express their feelings. And I can tell you this because of Sage, it has nothing to do with me, but all to do with her.

I understand - thank you.

And you can just switch channels or phone lines, like you said Sage, between them both?

Yes.

Absolutely remarkable.

*

How was she?

Well Doug, you'll be pleased to know we won't be separating, we're apparently in it for the long haul. We will have our ups and downs, like normal, but we'll hang in there, all so long as we keep speaking out our feelings, longing for their truth.

Sounds good to me.

You know Doug, she is really the most remarkable girl, and so young - now, have I said that before?

Oh, only about every day, I think.

Yes well, there she was sitting on her bed leaning up against the wall, and I was in the chair; and yet there were really four of us in the room, and possibly untold numbers of others - who knows; and she was switching effortlessly between speaking for herself, Ursula and Esmerelda.

A real woman's meeting.

Yes, and absolutely enthralling Doug, pity you missed out.

I like you filling me in. So what were you all talking about?

It was mostly me talking to Ursula, more about our Healing; but then we got onto soulmates, and that was fascinating.

Are we soulmates?

Oh god, I didn't ask them that.

Why don't go back now?

No, I don't want to take advantage of Sage, surely she's got to be resting after all of that.

YES YOU ARE!

THANK YOU SAGE!

YOU'RE WELCOME DOUG!

She's not eavesdropping on us, is she - she can't be?

They know all we're doing and saying, that much I know Cath.

Shish, it gets even more amazing by the moment.

Yeah, so she's up there happily resting is she... Cath, I don't think she knows what resting is, more likely she's up there yacking away with them still.

Are they all permanently plugged into each other - don't those spirits and angels have anything else to do with themselves?

It doesn't look like it. She is entirely their focus.

But Doug, if it keeps going on at this rate, what will she be - god, she's still so young.

Yes, I don't know about that, nor do I want to. It's still all sinking in what's happening, and even then I don't know if I understand more than a fraction.

And she says she is coming to the clinic tomorrow, to work with the kids - what do you think that means?

Time will tell my love.

Thank god I have you Doug, someone who is at least a little bit sane, or normal, or whatever you call it... see, all my terms of reference are being thrown on their heads; what is normal, I wouldn't call Sage abnormal - she's every bit normal... or is she? But she's definitely not insane... is she... maybe it's all stuff she's making up in her head.

Do you really think she is?

No, and that's the trouble. I think it's all very real, very true and very normal. God, obviously we humans have the potential for a lot more, look at what we're not utilising in what Sage can do; imagine if there were lots of Sages in the world - imagine what they could do for the world.

Mind boggling, Cath.

Yes, and here we are bumbling along; I wish I could be so tuned into such higher help as she is?

Why? I'm glad I don't have them all in my head all the time.

Yes... why do I? I think I'm jealous of her. Yes I am... oh god, but I don't want to be, she's so young, I don't want to be young again, but I can see that I do want to sound as important and all-knowing as Sage sounds. Yes, Doug, all right, here I go, into my bad feelings: I acknowledge that I want the power she has, for Christ's sake Doug, imagine being able to do half the things she can do.

Like, heal people?

Yes, but not just that, having access to a ready-made twenty-four hour in-mind hot line to spirit, to where all that superior information is so readily available. Yep, that's what I'd like Doug, to be so knowledgeable, to be so great in understanding everything, with people coming to me for advice and looking up to me... and yes, oh god I have to admit it, having people thinking well of me.

Yes, I want the attention, possibly even the fame, the acclaim, known for being such a great superior mind; and never to be beaten, never to say I don't know, always having an answer for everything. I can speak with the spirits, the angels, they are on hand, on tap, on line in my head 24/7, and I am The One. The superior one, the one everyone looks up to; Yes, I am the modern day Jesus, the female version Doug, the Greatest Woman the world has ever seen!

Oh fuck me Doug, but it's true, all I've said. I never even knew I had it all in me; but I do, I can feel it all, now that I've said it. All these bits and pieces which have been floating around in me, yet I'd not put them all together until now.

I feel like a right jerk, what an ego, me wanting to be the Greatest Woman that's ever lived.

And who do I think I am? Shit Doug, just then saying that, I heard my mother saying that to me: “And who do you think you are Catherine, are you the Great One, Catherine the Great are you, the Special One - is that what you think? Well, I’ve got news for you my dear girl, you are not, DO YOU HEAR ME, you are nothing - no one special like that.”

What a cruel thing to say to you Cath; why did she say that, what were you doing or saying?

It was because I was pretending I was a movie actress. I’d dressed up and was acting in front of the television. I was in my own little dream world. I remember saying things, and dancing around, as if I were the greatest woman on TV: the Greatest Woman in the world. Mum often crunched me like that, taking the wind out of my sails, bringing me down to earth and out of my dream world. But it didn’t matter, because I’d just go into my room or outside where she wouldn’t see or be able to listen to me, and carry on. I used to spend hours like that, pretending I was someone famous; but not pretending I was the famous actress herself, but that *I* was the famous actress. I was going to be on the stage, and on TV; that was until my period came, and then everything changed, and I sort of grew up. I realised that I wouldn’t be famous, and that really I didn’t want to be anyway, so I guess all of it got buried, because obviously the feelings are still alive in me.

Gosh, it is incredible what does come to light once you start paying attention to your feelings and going with them. And how do I feel now about it all? All right, but I can sense there’s more to it down inside me. But it is interesting, isn’t it, that I could be so jealous of Sage, all because my mother stopped me from doing what I wanted to do. She said I was not great, and yet I guess, I am still secretly hoping I am.

I think you’re great Cath; you’re the greatest in my eyes. And I wouldn’t want you to be famous, because then everyone else would want you to spend time with them, and this way I get you all to myself.

Well that’s nice to hear Doug, and it makes me feel better.

Good.

Alright Sage, if you need anything, or you want me for anything, just say so, otherwise I'll do what I normally with the kids and their families.

That's fine Cath, I don't think I'll be doing anything, you know, out of the ordinary; I just want to be with them seeing what I think and feel about everything.

Very well... here they come, so don't be afraid to ask me anything, and I'll do whatever you want.

Thanks Cath.

*

So Sage, as we observe the children, and as you study their problems and the interactions with their families and Cathy - what are you feeling?

I'm feeling sad Esmerelda, that's the main feeling. Sad that it's all so difficult, and everyone is having such a hard time, so much pain, so much suffering - those are the main feelings.

And you don't feel angry with God for making it be as it is?

No, because I feel God has Their reasons, and I'm too young to know them.

And if you could, what you like to do?

Heal them all. I'd like to heal them all. Do you have the same feelings that I do - do you too, feel sad and sorry for them?

No Sage, we don't have your human emotions. For us it's strictly about what you need to grow and experience, and we're indifferent as to whether it's an experience that makes you feel good or bad. We do prefer you feel good, because then we can work and be with you in the Light; however, if it is that you are to feel bad, and even if we are to help you feel bad, that too we understand is what you need now, and in time, will lead you to feeling good and loved.

But surely you want everyone to feel good and to be loving and happy?

We do, but we also understand there are relative feelings. You might feel bad now, but that will lead you to feel better than you would have felt, had you not felt as bad. And we know, because we can see as we look at everyone, what lies ahead for them; and even though for some there are many more bad things to happen and many more bad feelings to be felt, still in the end, everyone will end up feeling free of their wrongness and very happy, even happy that they were so bad and wrong and felt so unloved, and were so unloving themselves. In the end it is all loving, even evil, that being something you will all find out. That our Heavenly Mother and Father are all-loving,

as Mary Magdalene and Jesus told you all. And part of that love They have for you, is to help you experience no-love for the time it takes to thoroughly experience it; all so you will, when you've healed yourself of the bad experience, feel just how good feeling loved makes you feel. And you will know the difference between feeling truly not loved and feeling truly loved, and that will be a huge thing for you, and even a privilege for God to have chosen you to start off in this unloving way, when for many other people and spirits on other worlds, they only know love. And it can be said, that to know no-love will help you know love even more, so that's what it's about.

So in that case, why do I feel like I want to heal and help them all? Why not just leave them as they are, and in time they will work it all through for themselves as they do their Healing like Cath and Doug are starting out to do?

Because some people and spirits are to experience other experiences that aren't ordinarily part of what people and spirits generally experience, such as being healed by someone like yourself, someone who is a conduit or channel for us angels to work through. It's only that it's not a common occurrence on earth Sage, for if it was, then it would be accepted as something that happens quite often.

But if I am to heal some people and not others, that's not very fair, is it?

On the surface it might not seem fair, but it's what each person's soul needs, so on the soul level it is fair. Nothing happens to you that your soul doesn't want, it's all orchestrated, and so called for by your soul - your soul governs all. And we, the angels, are only responding to the needs of your soul. So if that soul needs healing, and you are the conduit for such love, light and truth; and it being what God wants, so it will be done, we being able to do anything that's required.

How did you learn how to do it all?

We're schooled in angel schools, and then through experience. It takes a long time, I have been around for a very long time Sage.

How long?

Billions and billions of years. Long before the earth was formed. And I have worked in many different situations, so I have the experience to orchestrate that which God wants you to do.

And what does God want me to do?

One of the most important things we learn is, what not to tell you; when we can tell you, what we do, and when it's best not to tell you other things. So I can't tell you that, because then I would be jeopardising your experiences, you'd know what was going to happen, and that would colour them, you'd not experience them in their fullness, I would have tainted and conditioned them

somewhat for you, even if slightly, and that is something I do not want to do. The whole of Creation currently exists for you Sage, not just you personally, but for all souls like yourself, all what are called truth-ascending souls, with us angels having been created to help you on your truth-evolving journeys. We are here only to help you, that is currently our sole purpose, which we relish feeling very good about. And all because we understand something of the bigger picture, which I also can't disclose to you yet, but it all makes perfect sense, and in time you will come to see it for yourself.

So all you angels are here only to help us people?

Yes, in all the different ways that you need help. Of which there are many. You couldn't survive by yourselves; you are too blind to the truth, you don't understand the bigger picture, so you need your unseen helpers to assist you.

Sort of like how those kids need us people who are not retarded or spastic or dysfunctional in a normal sense, to help them?

Yes, you are their angels if you like.

So what are we doing here today Esmerelda?

We are seeing what feelings come up within you Sage, and what thoughts you might have. And because I am to tell you, that soon, you will heal all of these children - so how does that make you feel?

Really, you mean you will heal them through me, and they'll all be like Micky?

Yes. It is what God wants; so it will happen.

When?

Soon. I can't tell you exactly when just now, however when it's time for it to happen, you will know; you will know exactly what is going to happen and when, and you will prepare those needing to know ahead of time. It will not be a surprise for you like it was with Micky. You are to be an active, fully informed participator in it Sage, in all that we do from now on.

But you said you wouldn't tell me because it would interfere too much with what I needed to do.

Yes, that was for that moment, that was what you were to know then; now, because of that, our experience together, we've moved on, you've changed, so now I'm able to tell you in advance as to what is going to happen.

I see. And what will happen once that has happened?

That too, you must wait and see; however it will all be as God wants it to be. Your Heavenly Mother and Father will tell you ahead of time; for as I said, nothing will come as a surprise to you again, you will be given glimpses into the future enough to know what's going to happen, and a feeling of when.

All right, thank you Esmerelda. I want to go home now, so I'll ask Doug if he'll take me back.

Tommy, what would do if your angels came to you and said you were soon going to heal a lot of people?

Is that what your angels have told you Sage?

Yes.

When are you going to do it?

I don't know yet, but they said they'll tell me - it's all the kids at Cath's clinic.

Wow! Can I be there?

Yes. I want you to be with me all the time that I do such things - do you think your parents will let you? It might take you away from school, but it will only be until my time comes to an end.

I don't know, maybe Doug and Cath could ask them. How much are you going to need me with you?

I don't know, I just love you being with me Tommy, I don't feel so alone.

Me either; I love being with you Sage, and not just because of our going on treasure hunts and things like that, I like being with you when we don't do anything, just like this, sitting on this big rock looking out into the bay - it's nice.

Yes Tommy, that's how I feel too.

And you know what Sage, do you know where my new hiding spot is, where I've hidden the loot?

No, where Tommy-

Right here Sage, we're sitting on it. I dug a tunnel in under this big rock, as I figured it won't be going anywhere anytime soon, and so it's down there under us, nice and safe.

Perfect Tommy, that's perfect.

And have you still got your crystal Sage?

Yes Tommy, see, and I've given it a name.

Yeah, have you - what is it?

Zarina.

Gee that's a pretty name.

Yes, and it's going to be the second name of your first baby girl.

Zarina, I'll write that now in my book... So, she'll be called: Sage Zarina.

Good. However she's going to prefer being called: Zarina Sage. So you'd better write that too.

All right. It's a bit confusing Sage.

You'll manage Tommy. And she'll tell you anyway.

You know Sage, I feel sad when I think of you going away. I can't help it, and I feel like crying even though I don't want to cry.

I know Tommy, me too when I think about leaving you. I won't be sad leaving this world, but I don't want to go away from you either Tommy. But there's nothing we can do about it, and one day we'll be back together again.

Yes, that's what I say to myself, trying to make myself feel better again.

So let's just enjoy being with each other for these months Tommy until I go.

Yes, alright Sage, and it will be like you're going away on a plane to another country or something, and that one day you'll return.

Yes, something like that.

So we're not going on any more treasure hunts, that's what I feel-

No, not just the two of us, there's no need Tommy. I will help you find things when I'm in spirit, as you'll be needing such things for when your children come; and you will enjoy those times Tommy, because you will know it's me helping you, even though you won't be able to see me. But I'll be able to talk to you in your mind, just as if I were here with you in person-

Great Sage, I will look forward to that. So you will be like having my own angel in my head, like you have yours.

Yes, something like that, only not as much, but just enough for us to communicate what we need to do together.

Alright then Sage, so I'll wait for you to come into my mind once you go away.

Yes, and it's all right to say, die, Tommy: ...once I die, because that's what I'll be doing.

But I don't want you to die Sage, going away is all right because I'll be seeing you again-

And you will see me again Tommy, only not for a long time, and when you die.

Yeah, but then I'll have to wait for such a long time, I might forget you Sage - forget what you look like.

And that will be all right, too, Tommy, you don't have to remember what I look like; and when we see each other again, we'll look differently to how we look now, anyway. You have a lot of life to live Tommy, and you'll love every moment of it - you're like that Tommy. And I'll be with you in spirit; and you'll not want me around all the time anyway, you are to have relationships with lots of other women, like I told you, which I know you can't relate to, but that's all right, because as you grow older, you'll change, and that too, is how it's meant to be.

Okay then Sage, I won't think about it. I'll write it all in my little book and wait until I grow older, and then see what I think about it all. And you can trust me Sage, I won't be selling our treasures, as you say, nor will I mention them to anyone else other than who they are to go to.

And Tommy, when you leave school, you won't want to stay living here, you'll leave and move up North, so you'll have to find another Big Rock to hide your treasures under.

That's okay Sage, it doesn't matter how many big rocks I hide them under, all so long as there is one that's not going to be moved by anyone without my knowing. And you know, I made a secret mark on the rock, like a secret code, using one of dad's old chisels, so I'd remember where to dig when the time comes to take them out.

Good Tommy, that's very clever of you-

Yeah, I thought you'd think I was smart, thinking of that.

I do think your smart Tommy, you're much smarter than you even know yourself. And that's one of the things I love about you.

Do you really think I'm smart Sage, and not just a smartarse like me dad says.

You are smart Tommy, angel-smart, that's what you are, smart like an angel.

That's good to know Sage, Pidge will like to hear that. Pidge is the one I tell all my secrets to but he couldn't come today with us, because sometimes he has to stay home and rest, so I put him in his coop. He'd follow me everywhere if he could. He even gets annoying at times because I can't get away from him - but I do love him.

How about fish and chips again Tommy - have you got any money?

Same old story Sage, my pockets are empty... OH NOT THEY'RE NOT! YOU BEAUTY SAGE! JEEZ I LOVE IT WHEN YOU DO THAT - WHEN YOUR ANGELS DO IT - THANK YOU SAGE'S ANGELS. COME ON SAGE, LET'S GO, WE CAN HAVE A REAL FEAST!

Sage, Cath and I have spoken with Tommy's parents, and although they don't really know what the hell we're talking about, they do understand how close the two of you are, and that if Tommy doesn't get too tired, or up to too much mischief, they don't see they'd be any problem with him being with you if it's on a weekday, or whenever you want him; they are even fine about him sleeping over with you, if you want that too.

Really I don't think they care one way or the other Sage, they seem happy that he's happy and busy with things he likes doing, they sort of give me the feeling they'd be glad for us to take him off their hands for a bit. So I don't think you have anything to worry about there.

Good, thank you Doug for asking them.

Not a problem Sage; and that goes for Cath and I, we've talked it over, and we're more than happy for you to have Tommy with us all the time, if that's what you'd like. We can appreciate that you like having him around, someone your own age, and that you two are very fond of each other, and we're glad that you do have someone you like so much.

*

Sage, this afternoon after school, you and Tommy will ask Doug to take to you Cathy's clinic, and there you will find Ricky and Don still with her, she'll be waiting for their mothers to pick them up. Take Zarina with you, and we'll do the rest, all you have to do is follow your feelings and do whatever you feel. How do you feel about that?

Good. I feel ready Esmerelda, I'm looking forward to it. I could sense something like that coming, and now you say it, it's as if I can see it all happening. It will be so good to heal both the boys - will they be made whole like Micky?

Don will be immediately; but not Ricky. Ricky's healing will take more time, he and his family will need time to adjust, which you will explain to his mother. We will be extending the time of his healing so it will take place over a couple of weeks, he'll progressively get better each morning when he wakes up. With Don it will be instantaneous, we'll be speeding up time, so all that will take place for Ricky over a couple of weeks, will happen in an instant with Don.

Alright. It's so good knowing what to expect - thank you Esmerelda.

It's my pleasure Sage, it's what we are here to do. Humanity is ready for this little addition of light. It will come as a complete surprise, however that's also how it's meant to be, the more of a surprise the better.

And what about the other children, will we help them?

Yes, you'll know what to do once you've done what you will with Ricky and Don.

*

I feel strange Doug, like something is going to happen, something's in the air.

Since when Cath?

Since speaking with Sage. She seems like she's changed somehow... almost like she's more remote, sort of like she's drifting away or something; I don't know, it's probably just my imagination.

Anything you should talk about more?

Yes, probably... Yes, I feel like I'm angry with her for not being how she usually is. I'm angry that she seems distant and not her normal self. She seems more inward focused, more than ever, and I feel like getting her and shaking her to wake up and come back out, and not to drift away... yes, almost as if I'm losing her.

Oh God, I just longed for the truth, and immediately I felt more jealousy I have toward her, and I realised that I'm angry because I feel like she's not paying enough attention to me, she'd rather be with her Sisters, and that I'm not as good as them, that I don't count, because I'm not as smart as them; I'm not as knowledgeable, that I'm dumb and stupid, and that all of us lot here on earth are idiots, and she condescends to put up with our limited understanding; but really, she's getting to the end of it, where she'd rather ditch us and go it alone herself. She has clearly demonstrated that she doesn't need us so far as being safe in the world.

But she still needs us for other things.

Oh I know, and I hate how I'm being completely unreasonable; I know, but still as Ursula has encouraged me to do, I'm trying to just be free with my feelings, going with them, and so see non-judgementally what comes to light. And that's all very well, but most of the time I don't like what comes to light, I don't like seeing these things about myself - they are not nice, and they make me feel bad - very bad. And I'm scared that you won't love me anymore, so I don't know if I want to keep bringing such things up.

Don't worry about me Cath, I'll still love you, no matter what; and I understand that it's all stuff from your childhood, and it's all got to come out. And as I can sense in myself, a lot of that stuff is going to be very unpleasant; but still, if it's within you, that's all part of you, and I've agreed to marry you warts and all.

Yes, but you've not seen the size or ugliness of my warts, they are all hairy and god knows what - YUK!

But I do... I feel envious of her again for having such close inner relationships with these

women-spirits and angels, and I wish I could be one of her confidants, and I that I would mean as much to her as they do. I wish I could relate to her, so she'd love me as much as she loves them... and here we go, now I can see that I'm projecting this onto Sage, when really it's mum I'm envious of, because I can remember wishing that mum paid more attention to me, and that I was one of the important people in her life, like dad, and some of her friends were. I hate the feeling of feeling left out, which I felt a lot in my family, everyone was involved in it all, yet I never felt like I was an important player, that really I didn't count, and it wouldn't have mattered had I not been there.

I feel sad Doug, sad for myself, I want to cry - boohooohoo me, nobody loved me for being me, nobody cared about me, they were all caring about each other, and I missed out. And I feel very hurt; hurt that they didn't care enough to see that I was feeling hurt and uncared about, that I was feeling like I had been missed out; but no, they were all wrapped up in each other, and that's how I feel Sage is, she doesn't care about me, she's too wrapped in these other women spirits; and it's not fair, I'm always the one missing out - and what am I going to do about it? I can't do anything, other than just feel alone and miserable, because that's how I always felt. So I have to go outside, and make up things in my mind, pretending that I'm some famous film star or something.

I feel very bad Doug, like I'm very bad for being envious and jealous of her, as that's a sin; you're not allowed to be like that, bad things will happen to you if you are... and well, I am, I can't deny it, I have to admit that I'm not a nice loving unconditional non-judgemental all-accepting person, as I am the opposite of all those things. And it's not good Doug, not good at all. I don't like myself being like this; who would like me if they knew the truth of me, even you will probably want to give me the flick once you see what I'm really like underneath.

Bad, bad, bad, I feel so bad, I want to cry, curl up into a ball and disappear, just vanish and cease to be. Bad, I feel very bad Doug; and now I've got a bad headache here, and it's throbbing away, and I've not felt this bad for ages.

I don't want to be bad Doug, I want to be a good girl, not a bad one, I hated it when my parents said I was bad; loathed it, and did all I could to try and change myself into being good. Argh, and now I can see that I think one of the ways I did that was to pretend that I knew things, that I was smart, that I was not only one step ahead of everyone, but that they didn't even matter to me, just as I was accusing Sage of being uncaring of me, that's how I was to them - or at least, pretended that I was.

Yuk Doug, I'm a horrible yuk person, and I'm so scared that you won't love me and will agree that I am a horrible yuk person, and will want to throw me away and leave; and how will I cope looking after twins all by myself. Shit I couldn't bear that, having only the babies as company, I'd go mad.

So I don't know what to do; what should I do - should I do anything about it, should I talk to Sage and ask her how she is?

No, I wouldn't do anything, it's all right, she's entitled to want to be alone and more indrawn. I wish I'd been left alone more and had been able to do what you did, play act and work things out for myself. I can see I'm able to let Sage go more because I wish I was given that freedom, so I

can hardly deprive her of it, when all I wanted was the same freedom.

Yes, you're right, it's not my place to say that she can't be as she is, that's just my parents talking again, so I won't do anything, not unless I were driven to and I just had to; and then I'd see what I felt. Yes, I can see it's all to do with myself, as Ursula says it is, it's not really about the other person, they are only there to help simulate the feelings we are to go into.

I feel a bit better now, I don't feel as sad and sorry for myself. I still feel a bit miserable about seeing that my parents didn't love me in this way, that I was deprived more than I thought. Yes, it's a shit of a thing this whole business of how we've been treated, and that most of the bad stuff we've chosen not to address, just sweep it all under the carpet and pretend it doesn't exist. And that's about how I feel about myself and my feelings, just sweep them out the door and maybe they will go away, which they've done until I'm able to pull them back inside.

And I wonder how the twins feel about all of this, I wonder if it disturbs them, if they feel they are on a roller-coaster ride with all my bad feelings swirling around. And I hope I don't mess them up too badly, I really do, I'd hate them to come out as messed up as I feel.

I think any bit you express and see the truth of, is one less bit that they are going to be subjected to, so that's got to be something positive and in their favour.

Yes, I hope you're right Doug.

Hi Sage, you all right honey?

Yes Cath, I'm fine. I've just got a lot on my mind lately.

Would you like to talk about it?

No, it's just stuff I'm working out with Ursula and Esmerelda.

Okay, so you know what you're doing?

Yes.

Oh God, I'm sorry Sage, but I sound just like my mother. Of course you know what you're doing, and of course you'd come and talk to me, wouldn't you, if you wanted to. I'm sorry Sage, I don't want to put that controlling shit on you like it was put on me.

That's okay Cath, I understand.

I've been speaking though some more of my bad feelings, and I don't like what I come up with about myself, it's not nice uncovering how unloving you are.

I know.

Oh well, if you're sure you're all right-

Yes, I'm sure; I'm hungry, and thought I'd see what's in the fridge.

Do you want me to make you something?

No, I'll get it.

See, Doug and Sage, I can't stop myself. It's just a torrent, and endless stream in flood, gushing out of me. And it's so easy... and how about you Douglas, would you like me to fix you a little something too; you're looking a bit pale, how about I get you an Aspirin, that will bring a bit more colour into your cheeks; and what about you over there, and what can I do for you, surely there must be something I can do whilst I'm up doing everything for everyone else.... No, no you're fine, well if you're all fine, what the fuck am I going to do with myself! I want to pull my hair out at the roots, it's all so maddening, I don't want to be like her, and my grandmother was the same... playing the perfect hostess, like we're all standing around having evening drinks, and I am to make sure everyone's glasses are full. Blah! I want to puke, it's all so false, such a show, so pretentious, and so much bullshit. I hated it back then, and I still hate it; and can see myself running around trying to be the good little hostess, the next one in probably a very long line of nice hostesses.

And you have to have the right glasses to drink the right drinks out of; and you can't drink that out of that, oh no, so uncouth; and you have to hold your glass properly in your hand, and you have to sit with your legs together, and you have to annunciate your words correctly, and you, and on and on, and will it never end?

Doesn't she do that well Sage? You're very entertaining Cath!

See, that's what all the practice did for me standing in front of the TV playing dress-ups. Oh, that's such a lovely cardigan Joanne, new isn't it, and that colour suits you down to a tee. Even though it looks dreadful on the old hag, and is completely the wrong colour. All total crap, Doug, you've got no idea all the bullshit I was subjected to, and I hated it then; I could see how false it all was, just a show, and a pathetic one at that. And I fought not to be like that, so I think my working with the kids at the clinic is part of my rejection of that falseness of my parents, because those poor kids can't even hold their own glasses, and with all their slobbering and runny noses and slack mouths and everything else, mess and slime and puke and shit all over the place, you don't have time for such airs and graces, they all get thrown out the window. So my working with them is probably just my way of saying, and possibly, god forbid, even pretending, that I'm not full of shit like my mother was, that I'm a down-to-earth, real, and no mucking about type of person, just get in there with all the muck and not worry about that shit... And what is the right perfume of the day all the ladies are trying not to wear because none of them want to smell the

same, and yet they all want to be the same.

And that's just it, isn't it, oh hey, a major revelation going on here: We all want to be different, and pretend we are, when that's all false, and really we all want to be the same. We all want to be the same when we are very young, no one wants to be singled out and not be part of the group; then we grow up wanting and believing we have gained our individuality, and we're not like our parents and all the rest, when the horrible truth is - WE ARE, WE ARE JUST THE SAME AS THEY WERE.

Oh god, so now I'm going to fall in a heap and weep for an age, because underneath I am probably still just like my mother, still wanting to put on the false show, still wanting to control and be seen in a good light; like I know what is right and what is in vogue, and what colours go with what other ones, and what ones clash, and on and on it goes, endlessly, effortlessly, and I wish it would all just piss-off from within me, so I can be free of it once and for all.

I don't want to be like my mother! I don't want to be like any of them! Nothing like any of how my family was! I want to be free - I say, DO YOU HEAR ME DOUG, I want to be FREE!

I hear you hon, I hear you.

Good, and thank Christ someone is paying attention, none of them ever cared so much, only when I was right in front of their eyes doing something they didn't condone, then they told me off; but they didn't care when I was in my room or outside, they didn't care one hoot about me, I could have fallen off the side of the world for all they knew.

Fallen off the end of the world-

Do you think I care!

Go Cath, that's what I say, you tell em, let it all out.

I WILL DOUG, AND IF YOU DON'T WATCH OUT, I'LL BE LETTING IT OUT ALL OVER YOU BEFORE I'M THROUGH.

That's okay, go for it. I'm sure I'll be able to cope.

I hope you can. But I'm pooped, I can't go on, I've had enough, I've got to rest, I've got to settle down, it's too much like hard work. This feeling expressing is harder than looking after the kids!

Yeah, well it's incredible where it takes you.

Yes, it sure is. I feel like I'm right back there with mum and dad and at one of their evening parties when I was allowed to stay up, all so they could show me off. And I can see now, it was not because they genuinely liked having me around, it was all so I could be another part of their show. Act 1, scene 2: enter Catherine from the right of stage carrying a plate of hors d'oeuvres

that she is to start handing around to the guests. “And how are you Cathy, are you well... and how is school treating you these days...”, and Cathy replies: “I’m well thank you... and school is good, I’m learning about evolution in Biology, Darwin’s survival of the fittest.” Yeah right, what a load of crap. What a little smartarse I was, god I feel embarrassed thinking back about it, all dressed up in my one of my latest summer frocks, me with hardly any tits at all, pretending I was desirable and all grown up and knowing what life was all about. And I used to secretly love it when old Mac Grovnor pattered me on my bum, it was all so naughty, so illicit, and such a thrill. YUK! The horrible old lech; perverted old man they’d call him now, probably back then too, but everyone was *so* nice, with *too* many refined manners, to say anything to him. It was all ‘in good fun’, and ‘nothing serious’, I overheard my mother and father arguing one night; yet what did I know, I was getting the much needed attention I craved, a pat on my arse, because I got fuck-all from my parents.

Yes, it’s all there Doug, all exactly how it was, all that I eventually revolted against; and now look where I am, my mother and father would probably be pulling their hair out! I didn’t ‘turn out for the best’, I’m just as hopeless as those children I look after, I’m one of the Dons and Rickys and Marees of the world, only not as fucked mentally and physically as they are; I’m able to be the one who looks after them, but probably truth be known, they are all far more capable than I am - look at Micky now.

*

Hi Sage, Tommy, I didn’t know you were coming here this afternoon.

I just felt like it, and asked Doug to bring us over.

I’ve still got Ricky and Don with me, I’m waiting for their mothers, they are both running late but should be here soon.

That’s okay love, anything we can help you with?

No Doug, you can stay with me and keep me company, the boys are all right, they’re asleep in the back room.

I’ll go and see if they are awake yet Cath, come on Tommy, let’s go and see how they are. Let’s be quite Tommy, we don’t want to wake them if they are asleep.

Ok Sage...

Yes, good, they are still asleep. Look Tommy, I’ve got Zarina, I’m going to touch each of them on their foreheads with it. Keep a look out to see if Doug or Cath are coming, and let me know - I don’t want them to see it.

Ok Sage, I can see right the way down the hall, all clear. Are you going to do something to them?

Yes, the angels are going to heal them. First Don, as his healing is going to be very quick, and then Ricky, his is going to take a couple of weeks to fully happen.

JEEZE, DID YOU SEE THAT LIGHT FLASH SAGE! THAT WENT INTO THE CRYSTAL, AND THEN STRAIGHT INTO DON'S HEAD - WHAT HAPPENED, IS HE ALL RIGHT?

Yes Tommy, that's the Healing Light, it's the angels flashing it into him through Zarina-

SHIT, LOOK AT WHAT'S HAPPENING TO HIM, HE'S JIGGLING ALL OVER, LOOK AT HIS ARMS, THEY ARE CHANGING; THAT ONE'S GROWING, SHIT, IT'S FREAKY; AND LOOK AT HIS BENT FOOT, IT'S STRAIGHTENING OUT; OH MY GOD, LOOK; LOOK AT WHAT'S HAPPENING TO HIM, HE'S CHANGING, HE'S BECOMING RIGHT, LOOK SAGE, LOOK WHAT YOU'RE DOING-

Yes Tommy... they're not coming are they?

No, no, all clear still, but I can't watch the corridor when you're doing that. SHIT, NOW IT'S HIS TEETH, LOOK HIS WHOLE FACE IS CHANGING SHAPE, AS IF IT'S MADE OF RUBBER, IT'S ALL CHANGING, HIS WHOLE BODY IS MOVING; SHIT SAGE, DO YOU THINK YOU SHOULD STOP, HE LOOKS LIKE HE'S IN AGONY-

No Tommy, he can't feel a thing, he's not in his body, he's left it, he's in his spirit body up over there looking down watching us, watching what's happening to his physical body; in fact there are masses of spirits watching the miracle, there is so much light in the room... We're just about done now Tommy, it was a big healing, and he'll sleep for a little more, then he'll wake up a whole new person. They are going to make further adjustments to his mental, emotional and feeling systems - to his whole aura... Now we'll work on Ricky. Is it still clear Tommy?

Yes.

Good, okay Ricky, it's your turn now, here we go, the angels are going to work on you now... I'm moving Zarina round to the back of his head, they are going to work from that side into his brain, here we go Tommy-

SHIT, THERE GOES THAT FLASH OF LIGHT AGAIN - WOW, THAT'S COOL, WHAT A FLASH, SO BRILLIANT WHITE, AND YET I DON'T SEE ANY FLASH LEFT IN MY EYES LIKE WHEN YOU LOOK AT THE LIGHT WHEN YOU TURN IT ON AND OFF QUICKLY AT NIGHT-

It's a different sort of light Tommy, you only see one flash, but if you could see what I can, there are lights of all colours everywhere flashing and pulsating, moving all over the place. They are inserting many rods of light into Ricky, all over his body and right throughout his auric system, and these rods are slowly going to shine their light and that will affect the changes in him over a few weeks. It's like a symphony of light that's going to be played out within him, and it was the same for Don, but it all happened very fast, not over a couple of weeks.

Gee Sage, yes, I can see he's changing a little too, but nothing like what you did to Don. Don looks normal, like I expect him to wake up, get up out of his chair, and just muck around like we do.

He will soon Tommy, but we have to leave them now in peace for a bit. I've finished, so let's go back to Doug and Cath.

Ok Sage, that was neat.

Just don't say anything to Doug and Cath until the boys wake up - alright?

Yeah, not a peep... wow Sage, you're wonderful, and I love you for doing those things for the boys.

It's not me Tommy, it's the angels doing what God's wants us to do; all of us, including you Tommy.

Me? But I didn't do anything.

Oh yes you did Tommy, you saw it all, you were there, and that's very important; important for both of us, for much later on when we are together again in spirit. You'll see then, but it's not for a long time Tommy.

If you say so Sage.

Hi you two, how are the boys?

They're sleeping well.

Hopefully it shouldn't be too long before they wake up, because I want them awake before their mothers get here, it won't disturb them as much.

Hey Cath, who's that running?

DON!!!!!!!!!!

Hello everyone, and thank you Sage, that was great. Sage fixed me, LOOK, LOOK at me, my legs and arms work, I've got a whole new body, and it was so neat looking down watching her work on my body with all that light. Wow Sage, thanks a bunch, I can't wait to surprise mum, she won't know what to think.

I don't know what to think Don - give me a big hug!

Oh Cath, and thank you so much, all the work you did with me, you helped me no end, you have no idea how much love I felt from you all the time; and I don't want to be leaving you, but I have to, you know, get on with my new life that Sage has given me.

Of course Don, of course, yes, you must; and no of course I don't mind, I'm just shocked, but ecstatically happy for you... Sage you didn't say anything-

No, I wanted to work on my own and with Tommy, just to see what it was like knowing what was going to happen, the angels told me everything. Ricky is going to get better too, but his healing is going to take a few weeks to be complete, it will give him and his family more time to adjust to all the changes that will be taking place.

Ricky! Yes, I forgot all about him, I'll go and see if he's awake too.

Come Tommy, we'll go and wait outside for mum - give her a real surprise.

Yeah, okay Don.

Wow Sage, that was quick!

Yes Doug, I know, there was a lot of light, a lot of healing power used to fix Don and to do what they needed to do with Ricky.

Yes, here he is, and yes, I can see obvious changes in him Sage, and all for the better too. Wow hon, you have done very well, incredible, I'm too blown out by it all, I don't know what to say.

There is nothing to say Cath, it's what God wants, and it's the angels doing, I was just the vehicle for it to happen through.

Yes Sage, but this is amazing, this, this is... oh God, I feel like I'm going to cry Sage; this is it, isn't it, I mean, this is really it, this is what you've been leading up to, this is the beginning, it's really going to happen, isn't it?

Yes, it's begun.

Don's mum is here, she nearly pranged the car, she got such a shock seeing him standing there waving at her. She's hugging the new life out of him!

And are you all right Sage?

Yes, I feel very good.

And so is there anything we need to do for either of them - what about for Ricky?

No, it's all going to be taken care of, just tell his mother what's happened and that he'll be perfect in a couple of weeks.

It's a miracle - two miracles Sage!

Yes, I suppose so, if that's what you want to call it.

It was the coolest thing I've ever seen, Don's body was made of rubber being pulled this way and that as he changed shape, it was bizarre, gross, but incredible, the best thing I've ever seen. One big flash of light, and here they are!

SAGE, YOU DID THIS, you healed my boy; and look at him, he's just like I've always dreamed. How did you do it, it's impossible, but look at him... thank you ever so much, I am so shocked, it's too much, I don't know what to say... I have to get him home to the rest of the family-

Will you be all right to drive Sharon?

Yes, nothing bad could happen, not after this, I'm stunned, I don't know what to say, thank you sounds a bit lame, it's incredible, a miracle from God, it's... let me give you a hug Sage, and I am so grateful, I have dreamed of Don being normal, but never believed of course that it could happen; but now, now look at him ginning from ear to ear. Come on Donny, let's go home and surprise your father and brothers and sisters, this is cause for celebration, we'll stop on the way home and pick up something to drink, we're all going to need it.

Can I've something too mum?

Sure Don, why not, drink all you like, it's a miracle, you're a miracle, oh my God, thank you all, thank you all, we'll speak soon Cath, when I can make more sense.

Ok Sharon.

Bye, and thank you again Sage you wonderful girl... but how did you do it... I just don't

understand, it's too much-

Come on mum, can I drive-

SHIT NO, now that's asking too much.

Good to be home mum-

Oh Donny, let's go... bye everyone...

*

So Cath, what an afternoon!

The understatement of the year.

I know; and what does she mean by: "It's begun".

I think you know Doug.

You mean Cath, this is just the start and we expect more such goings on?

Yes, and I guess this is what it's all been about, getting her ready to do such wonders; and if she can do that seemingly so effortlessly, what might she be capable of?

Yeah I know, and she just wanted to go off and have fish and chips on the Big Rock with Tommy, just like nothing had happened.

I know, and she's only thirteen, so young - what are we going to do?

I don't know Cath, you know my feelings about it, there's too many running riot when I think along those lines. It's too much, we don't know what we're in for, what she's in for; what if the press get hold of it, which they will have to because everyone will tell what's happened, you can't keep such things secret - and we didn't even tell them to.

I know, I thought about that afterwards; however I just keep feeling to let it be, to see what happens. It's been all right so far.

Yes, but so far didn't come with an "It's begun", so I don't know whether to jump for joy or to cry.

I know Doug, me either. I so much want whatever to happen if it's going to be as incredible as

this, and yet I'm petrified.

We'll have to ask her what she thinks, they might have told her what's going to happen, what we're all in for.

Yes, however judging by the way it was all set up so well this afternoon, I don't think we're going to be let in on such secrets Doug, I think we'll just be going along for the ride.

I suppose you're right, but SHIT, SHIT, SHIT, SHIT - that's all I can say.

I know how you feel, but when you look at Don standing there like it's the most natural everyday thing you could think of that's happened, and his mother crying and so happy, well, you can't help but want more of it, can you?

No, you want them all to be fixed. And I wonder if that's her intention?

I think it is, I've asked her a few questions and she's shown quite a bit of interest in the clinic; so hey, I might soon be out of a job!

Yes, but there are others who will come and fill their spots.

I know Doug... and does that then mean she will help them too?

Yeah, it's too much, my mind is fucked, I think I need a drink - do you want anything?

I wish I could join you and get blind drunk, tonight would be good night for it. No, I'll get some juice, but you go right ahead, I'll nurse your aching head in the morning.

God I love being with you Cath.

Even after all that stuff I've been saying, all my poor me stuff, and how badly treated I feel.

Yes, even the more so because of that, it's helping me to understand how you are; and that makes us closer, I feel I'm getting to know you, to know the real person, and not just the surface, but all the bad deeper stuff; which is not really bad, it's just all the bad stuff that was done to you. It wasn't your fault, you couldn't help turning out how you are, not that that's bad by any stretch of the imagination.

I know Doug, but it still makes me feel bad.

Of course, how could it not, but you'll be okay; we'll keep working on it together, and no doubt what Sage might do will only help bring up more bad feelings for us.

Yes. I dare say it will.

*

That was so neat Sage what happened with Don and Ricky, thank you for wanting me to be there with you, it was so good, I'll never forget it.

It's only just beginning Tommy, and you'll be there for everything.

You mean you're going to do more healings like that?

Lot's more.

How many more?

Countless more.

Countless more... shit Sage, how can you?

It's not me Tommy, you know the drill. But please don't tell anyone.

No, I won't, I won't say nothing Sage. It's just between you and I; however everyone is going to see what you do, it's not going to be kept a secret, and people will start talking, and everyone will want to meet you Sage, and how will we be able to come to Big Rock for our fish and chips?

Don't worry Tommy, we will, I'll make sure of that.

You will - great! Can you do everything Sage?

Not everything Tommy, but I know all that's going to happen in the coming months, I've been shown it all by the angels.

Wow Sage, is there nothing those angels of yours can't do?

They can do anything and everything Tommy, there is nothing they can't do, it's only whether or not God wants them to do it, that's all.

God must be some pretty mighty Dude all the way up there.

Yes, and I'm going to teach you about Them Tommy as you grow up, as I grow and learn myself. There's a lot I don't understand, and I've got to do my Healing one day like what Doug and Cath

are starting, as will you, but we're too young for that just yet, there are other things we need to do through the remainder of our childhood, this being one of the things that we're about to begin now.

Alright Sage, whatever you say, I love it all, I don't care what you do, I'll be with you, even if all I have to do is stand and watch. That was so awesome what Don went through, I can't get him out of my mind, I keep seeing him wriggling around like an electric current was going through him, like you see on those scary films; but that was real and nothing bad happened to him, it was all good - you are amazing Sage.

Thank you Tommy.

So what are you going to do next then?

I'm going to heal all the kids left at Cath's work, this Saturday when all their families are visiting.

Like how you did with me there... but they'll see Zarina?

No Tommy, I'm going to keep her hidden, she doesn't need to actually touch anyone, I only did that to see what would happen; they can pass all the light they need through her and into me, and then from me into the other people. And then in the end, they won't even need me to make contact with anyone, it will evolve Tommy, into my not needing to be there, and even to my not needing to be here. You'll see Tommy, it's all going to start happening from Saturday, because with all those people there, the word will get out.

And you still want me to come Sage?

Oh yes Tommy, you must be there; and I want you to sleep over on Friday night - will that be all right?

Sure Sage, I love our sleep overs, I love snuggling up next to you on your bed; and I love all the stories you tell me helping me drift off to sleep - I wish we could sleep every night together Sage.

I do too Tommy, but we can't, not yet, but one day we will.

In the future Sage?

Yes.

But why does it have to be so far away, that's not fair - I want to do it now!

I know Tommy, and so do I, but we can't; so here, hold my hand now, and I will ask the angels to

join us together, so even though we will be apart, we'll still be together... there, how's that Tommy, how does that feel?

Really nice Sage, all warm, heat is going right up my arm, and your hand is so hot.

Good. So now it's done Tommy; you and I are joined on the spiritual level, we're soulmates Tommy - do you know what that is?

No Sage, not really; something about being in love forever, or something like that.

Yes, being in love forever Tommy, that's what it is; but it just can't happen yet. One day it will, as I've said, one day Tommy we'll be together forever, and then we'll be able to spend every night sleeping together, and we'll be able to do everything together; we won't have to go to any school, and we can go and help other spirits, and possibly even people back on earth, like your great, great grandchildren Tommy. And it will be like in a way they are our children, and we will be able to look down at them growing and coming into being; and we'll be able to see Zarina being passed down your line to the girls all with flaming red hair and emerald green eyes; and we'll be with them Tommy, helping them to do what they will need to do. It will be great fun Tommy, and we'll be so much in love... so just you wait and see Tommy, it will all happen as I've said, that much you can trust me; and our time will come, and we'll be so happy living together; yes Tommy, I can see it, feel it, sense it with all my being, but I also know there are other things we need to do and other people and spirits we will both need to be with first.

Yeah, so you keep saying Sage.

It's more for you to write in your note book Tommy.

I'm going to have to get a bigger book.

Let's go for a ride Tommy-

Yeah sure Sage, as I'm staying at your house tonight, I don't have to be home at any time for mum and dad - how late can we stay out?

We won't be long Tommy, there's a couple of people we are to meet.

Another adventure Sage?

Yes Tommy.

GREAT!

Come on, let's go...

Which way Sage?

Down this road and into the park at the end of the next street.

You mean the park with the big acorn trees?

Yes, that's the one.

What are we going to do there, it's not acorn season yet Sage?

I know Tommy, we're going to see some people-

But it's getting dark Sage, and the park... you know...

You've got nothing to worry about Tommy, and the light will hold out for what we need to do.

Okay Sage, I sure hope your angels are with us now.

Yes Tommy, always, and there's one of your nature spirit friends sitting on your handlebars. So we're not alone, we've got lots of unseen friends with us.

Shit Sage, don't tell me things like that, I nearly crashed trying to look for it and not watching the road.

Well concentrate on what you're doing!

All right, I'll be alright; I'm a better rider than you.

You want to make a bet?

No Sage, only kidding... We're here, where to now?

Down the main path toward the swings.

Okay, follow me.

I'm right behind you Tommy, and when you get to the swings, we'll stop, as it's by the big gumtree where we're going.

Yeah, I know the one, I love looking for cicada shells up its trunk in the summer... Shit Sage,

there are people there-

Yes Tommy, those are the people we've come to see. Let's leave our bikes here.

Righteo Sage, do you want me to go ahead and call out to them?

No, they'll see us coming.

Hello children, what are you both doing out at this hour, you should both be at home.

We're on our way home, we won't stay long, we just want to meet you, say hello, and see if we can help you.

Oh thank you my dear; and I am Raznatz and this is my wife Ezina, and these are our children; and unfortunately you catch us at a bad time, we've been evicted from our house, the bad man told us we couldn't live there anymore, and we have nowhere to go. You see I have no money, I lost it all, it was stolen from me, and so we are feeling very upset about our situation, and we don't know what we are to do.

I know, and I know that you had a lot of money and it was taken from you by the man who kicked you out of his house.

You know? Yes, we thought we could trust him, but as you can see, we were foolish.

That's okay because God wants you to know that you've done nothing bad, and that He will look after you for this evening.

Thank you my dear, that is very sweet of you; thank you for stopping by and telling us that, because we are firm believers in God. Are you a Christian by any chance?

No, however I'm a worker for God, and Tommy here is my helper, and God has told us to come here tonight to help you; He's sent an angel with us, and the angel will help you. Your wife is sick, this God told me, and your little daughter has a deformed foot, and such problems the angel is now going to take away from you. Is that all right with you Raznatz?

Oh yes, of course, it would be most wonderful, all I could ask for; but how can it be? And it is so, what you say, my dear wife has cancer of her stomach, and so we are told she has not very long to live; and, yes, my darling little girl does have a deformed foot, and we are feeling very sorry for ourselves, we've had such bad luck.

Yes, I know, my angel is telling me, and through no fault of your own. Anyway, as Tommy and I have to be on our way to get home now, your wife will be made well, you will see it is so by the

morning, and so will your daughter's foot be made right; and you will also find some money, enough to give you a fresh start in life. And in the morning, a man will see you all living here, and will offer you a place to live, which will be good for you to accept, as it will lead you to finding work and happiness for you and your family.

You are making me cry little one, all you say is such a wonderful story; if only it were true, if only it were true...

That's all right, I know you don't believe me, but you will in the morning; and when you wake up, say a prayer of thanks to God and his angels; and that is all now, no harm will come to you tonight, you will be watched over so you can rest in peace. Goodbye Raznatz, and say hello to your wife for us when she wakes up and is feeling much better.

Goodbye... and what is your name, my dear girl who tells such nice comforting stories?

I am Sage, and this is Tommy.

Goodbye to you Sage and Tommy, and may life be sweet to you, too.

Will it all happen Sage, all that you said?

Yes Tommy, it's already happened, only he won't dare look to see if it's true until morning, and then he will be very surprised and very happy.

You are such a nice kind person Sage, looking after people who are having such difficulties.

There are too many for me to look after Tommy, far too many, and it saddens me when I think of all the people that must be feeling so alone and unloved.

It would be good to help them all, wouldn't it?

Yes, but it's too much for one young girl, and her handsome helper-

You think I'm handsome Sage?

Yes Tommy-

COOL, and you're so pretty Sage... yes, I guess it would be too many people.

Yes, and what am I to do? Look after everyone who gets a stomach ache, everyone who gets cancer, every disabled child that gets born; no Tommy, it's too much, and not what God wants anyway. God only wants me to be a Living Demonstration of Their Love, to give people

something bigger to think about. So my Healings, although permanent for those who receive them, will only be available for a short time; for as I've told you Tommy, then I will have to move on into spirit, because there is more work for me to do there. There are many more lost spirits than lost at heart people Tommy, and many of them are in a very bad state of mind, so I will be needed to help shine some light on them.

I don't know what you're talking about Sage, but I know you will be good and do good wherever you go - that much I know having been with you for this short time.

Thank you Tommy. Now we'd better ride fast to get home before the light goes out completely.

*

Are you two okay?

Yes Doug, we're fine, we just had to help a family that were in a bad way.

Oh. Cath is in bed having a rest and wants to see you when you come in.

I'll go right up.

You want something to eat Tommy, I've got the BBQ going.

Can I cook - I love cooking on the Barby?

Sure Tommy, and you can tell me what happened with the family.

Hi Cath-

Oh hi Sage, please come in, I want to speak to you if you've got a minute.

Sure.

Come and sit here on the bed, I want to hold your hand. As I've been lying here, certain thoughts have been going through my mind, I think Ursula has had a hand in them. It's to do with you saying: "It's Begun". That sent shivers through me, and I've been thinking about it after all that happened this afternoon at the clinic. For you to begin something, then means that there will also be an end - won't there?

Yes.

And if you are going to get serious with this healing thing, then it could get very big, and very big fast.

Yes.

And if that's the case, we'll lose you, I mean to the world, to everyone wanting to know you, everyone wanting to be healed; Christ, the whole world will want you to heal them.

Yes, that's right.

And you're okay about that?

I can't heal everyone, but it's going to get big, yes; and yes, I'm okay about that, because I know what's going to happen, every step of the way-

And right to the end?

Yes.

Incredible, you are incredible Sage.

It's not me-

I know, but it is also you, because without you on earth, they'd have no one to work through - isn't that right?

Yes.

See, I think she has been giving me these thoughts. Anyway, what I wanted to say was, the end means, there can only be one end, can't there?

Yes.

So when will that happen?

In four months time.

Oh shit, only four months left, oh Sage, I will miss you, I love you so much, I wish it didn't have to be this way, but I understand it can only be that way, because you can't live a normal life after what you'll do, it's not possible even if your power suddenly left you, people would never leave you alone, it would go on and on and... oh Sage, I love you so much.

Yes Cath, and I love you, and all you say is true, so it - I - will have to end.

And do you know how that will happen?

No, but it will be of my own doing, not someone else's; when the time is right, they are coming back to get me, and I will go with them.

Yes... Oh I can't stop crying, and you will go into spirit; and what there, to carry on doing your healing work?

Yes, so I am told.

Oh dear Sage, I will have to break it to Doug as gently as I can. I am so upset, and yet strangely I also feel really happy; I don't understand, I am to lose you - we are to lose you, and yet I feel like it's the best thing, like I've been told I've won the Lotto.

It's to protect the babies Cath, they don't need to be subjected to such hurt and pain, so you will feel good about my passing, not bad; and then they will come, and you will see, everything will be all right between you and Doug, it will work out, and you'll both be doing the real healing that humanity needs, not all the showy stuff that I will be doing, all that is really only placing a band-aid over the wound.

Oh Sage, yes, I know what you say is true, and that too makes me feel good. It's all so amazing, anything to do with you is not what you think, it's all round the other way. Oh Sage, I just don't know what to think; but I want to tell you, that you are free to do as you please as far as Doug and I are concerned. I'll tell him tonight, and I know he will agree. And what I mean is, we don't want to place any restrictions on you, this is way bigger than he or I, so if you want to go, do so with our blessings.

Thank You Cath, there will come a time when I will need to leave, so as to protect the four of you, and I will tell when that time is - as you will know anyway. And then we can say our goodbyes; but then I will return and be with you in spirit, so we won't be that far apart.

Yes, I like the idea of that. How you see earth and spirit as one always takes me by surprise, how readily you accept it, but I guess you're already in some ways half in our world and half in spirit, aren't you?

Yes, sometimes I have to think which reality am I in, and I forget that I'm talking to Tommy on earth, and that we are not both in spirit sitting on the Big Rock.

Oh Sage, you are so pure and true, and such a dear soul. I do hope... no, I mean, I shall look forward to meeting you again when my time comes for me to come into spirit.

Yes Cath, I'll be there to meet you, don't you worry about that.

It's such a bore the whole time thing, all this separation-

Yes, but it's very necessary.

I suppose so. Come on, let's go down and join the men, I'm feeling a little hungry now.

*

Sage, I spoke with Doug last night, and he too understands although he is very sad. He'll be down later, he wants to think things through and come to terms more with it all, and he didn't get much sleep last night, as you can imagine. Has Tommy gone home?

Yes, we had breakfast, and he had to go and get ready for school.

And you're not going to school today?

No, I'm going to see Ruth later and explain how I won't be coming much to school anymore, and I want to go and have some time alone today, as that sort of time will become less and less.

Yes, I understand; and as I thought, Doug is also happy to let you go too - we are both here if you need us in anyway.

Good, because there will be times I will need your help, but mostly I intend to keep you both out of it when it starts in earnest.

Thank you Sage for your thoughtfulness, I was hoping you'd say something like that, as much as I'd love to be with you though it all.

No, it wouldn't be right so subject yourselves to the madness when it begins; and you have to look after those two, because they will need to grow up understanding all about the real Healing that you and Doug are doing, and doing with God and the Divine Love.

Yes, our prayers have been going well, we love our Love-Time as we now call it together, it's becoming the central focus of our day, it's so comforting and reassuring receiving the Divine Love; and then we our doing our best to express as many of our bad feelings as possible, whilst longing for their truth, however it's hard, and trying, and sometimes I just don't feel up to it.

It's only what you want to do Cath, there's no pressure on you, it's just as you feel you want to do it, and you'll find there are times when you do more, and other times less.

Yes, that's already beginning to happen.

Cath, I want to ask you to do something for me-

Yes of course sweetheart, anything.

I want to come again, Saturday week, to your clinic, and heal everyone who is there on that day, and with all their families present.

Oh boy Sage, yes, by all means; so what would you like me to do? God, what a day that's going to be!

No, there is nothing else; we'll just let it unfold and see what happens.

All right; so I'll do what I think is necessary, and Doug will have everything ready, such as places to sleep if anyone faints, or anything like that.

No, no one will faint, the angels will see to that.

I've already been fending off questions playing ignorant, not saying I know anything about anything that's happened, but once you do what you intend doing, then there will be nothing I can do.

I know.

Very well Sage, and at least that gives Doug and I a bit of time to prepare ourselves mentally, thank you for that, and not just surprising us.

It's how I want it done, I've been working it out with the Sisters.

Yes of course - thank you Sisters up there, and thank you too, Esmerelda - gee I'm going to miss having them around.

You'll enjoy the peace Cath, and not feeling like you're back at school every day having to learn more stuff.

I wish I'd learnt all this at school instead of all that rubbish. Then I might have liked school.

You wouldn't have been ready Cath, and having a horrible time at school has helped you prepare for what you are doing now with Doug.

Oh Sage, I am going to miss you!

Alright Tommy-

Where to today Sage?

You know the lost dogs home over by the reservoir, I want to go there today.

Oh yeah? Why Sage, you going to buy a puppy or something like that - they have lots of cats too, you know?

Yes I know, and they have currently lots of very sick animals because there was a chemical spill at another lost dogs home, and it hurt a lot of the animals, and they've been bought over to our one.

How do you know that Sage, did your angels tell you?

No Tommy, not this time, I saw it on the News. So how do we get there Tommy?

That's easy Sage, I know a few short cuts, it won't take long - follow me!

*

Oh gosh Sage, look at all the animals, there's so many of them all lying about half dead - how are the few people here supposed to look after all of them?

Exactly Tommy, they can't, and many of them will die, which probably wouldn't be a bad thing. However because of what we're going to do, the whole shelter is going to be empty by the day after tomorrow, with all the pets going to new homes.

Great Sage! So what do we do?

First of all we have to find the man who runs it.

You wait here Sage and I'll go and find him... I think that might be him over there... Hey Mister, do you run this place?

Go away kid, not now, we can't find you a new puppy because we're too short staffed, and we've had a disaster, and I'm about at my wits end.

No worries Mister, Sage and me are hear to help you, she heard about it on the News last night.

Yeah, and I'm sure the help is well intended, but there is nothing you'll be able to do. I've been turning do-gooders away all morning, you'll only get in the way and cause more work for the few

volunteers who know what they are doing.

Oh no Mister, we won't get in the way, we'll stand over there in that empty space and help from there - how's that?

Fine kid, you do whatever you want, just don't get in the way, please.

Hey Sage, that bloke is very stressed, he doesn't want us helping because he says we'll only get in the way as we don't know what we're doing. Look at all these poor dogs and cats...and rabbits and guinea pigs, and there's even some goldfish in a tank in there - they might like it better in my pond.

What's inside Tommy?

More animals lying all over the place, some of em look real crook, most of em are sleeping or dead.

Alright, let's go in there and have a look...

See Sage, they look in a bad way... and there are the goldies... yeah, I like them.

Yes, the poor things, but it won't matter Tommy, they'll all be right in a few minutes. Let's start healing them.

GOOD ON YOU SAGE, WHAT DO YOU WANT ME TO DO?

Well, when they get up, see if you keep them together so they don't disturb the ones we're still working on.

Righteo Sage, get your angels into action... WOW SAGE, LOOK AT THAT! YOU'RE JUST WALKING PAST THEM AND THEY'RE ALL RISING FROM THE DEAD!

They're not dead Tommy, heavily sedated, so they'll be a bit wobbly, can you handle them okay?

Sure Sage, they're all following me, look, it's as if they think I'm the one who's gone and fixed them.

WHAT THE HECK'S GOING ON IN HERE!

Where fixing your dogs and cats for you MISTER - EH, WHERE CAN I TAKE THIS LOT?

FIXING THEM, OH MY GOD, YOU ARE! LOOK AT THEM ALL COMING TO LIFE,

AND EVEN WITH ALL THAT SEDATION, AND ALL LOOKING GOOD AS GOLD... OH MY GOD - EVERLY, CHRIS, TERRY, JULES, SANDY - ALL OF YOU, COME INTO THE OFFICE - QUICK, I NEED YOUR HELP... LOOK, LOOK WHAT THEY ARE DOING TO THEM ALL!

Come on Tommy, we'll go outside now and help those ones, and then the others in the pens, whilst they take them to where they want them.

Ah Sage, look at em all, they look a bit dazed, but they are all happy, wagging their tails and licking me, and the cats are all coming around you, none of them is running away; they're not scared, and not of the dogs either, who aren't chasing them. Wow Sage, you're the greatest, even the guinea pigs and rabbits, look at them all following you, they all love you Sage, and you're not doing nothing, just walking past them all, and they all get fixed up, they just slowly get up and look about dazed and then start following you; you're like em flaming mother, the mother to all the animals Sage!

Where finished now Tommy, we can go.

Righteo Sage. I wish I could take one of these dogs home, I love this black one Sage, I wish dad would let me have it.

Take him Tommy, we can speak to your dad later.

Oh no Sage, he wouldn't let me, I asked him the other day... but this one, I'd call him Alex... eh Alex, you're a nice dog Alex, and are you feeling a lot better, you sure look better old boy, you was nearly dead by the look of you, but now you're all right, now your all better, em angels fixed you up, it was all Sage's doing, she really did it... look Sage, he likes me, I can tell.

He does Tommy.

WAIT ON YOUNG GIRL, YOU'RE NOT GOING ARE YOU?

Yes, we've fixed all your animals.

AND JUST LIKE THAT! YOU WALK IN OUT OF NOWHERE, WALK AROUND, AND ALL THESE POOR WRETCHED CREATURES ARE COMPLETELY HEALED, EVEN LOOKING BETTER THAN HEALED, IF THAT CAN BE POSSIBLE. MOST OF THEM I'D WRITTEN OFF WHEN THEY FIRST CAME IN, BUT WE DIDN'T HAVE THE HEART TO PUT THEM TO SLEEP, WE WERE GOING TO GIVE THEM THE BEST WE COULD, AND KEEP ANY THAT LOOKED LIKE THEY MIGHT HAVE HAD A CHANCE OF PULLING THROUGH. BUT THIS MORNING IT DIDN'T LOOK LIKE IT WAS GOING TO BE MANY; AND NOW, WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO THINK? HOW

AM I SUPPOSED TO PROCESS THIS, THIS DOESN'T HAPPEN, IT JUST DOESN'T, YOU WISH ALL YOUR LIFE THAT IT WOULD, BUT IT DOESN'T-

IT HAS NOW MISTER!

YOU'RE BLOODY WELL RIGHT ABOUT THAT MATE. IT'S INCREDIBLE, AND I CAN'T THANK YOU ENOUGH, AND I DON'T EVEN WANT TO KNOW HOW YOU'VE DONE IT; I STILL CAN'T BELIEVE MY EYES, LOOK AT THEM, THE LIFE IS STILL COMING BACK TO THEM, SOME OF THE DOGS ARE BEGINNING TO BARK, AND THAT'S A GOOD SIGN-

IT WAS THE ANGELS, MISTER, THAT DONE IT; SHE TALKS TO THEM, AND THEY TOLD US TO COME HERE THIS MORNING AND HELP YOU. SHE SAW IT ON THE NEWS LAST NIGHT.

THE ANGELS?

YEAH, YOU KNOW, GOD'S ANGELS IN HEAVEN, THEY ARE THE ONES WHO CAN HEAL ANYONE AND ANYTHING, SO ALL YOUR DOGS AND CATS MISTER, THEY'VE FIXED THEM ALL UP FOR YOU.

WELL I'LL BE, YOU'RE DOING MY HEAD IN... ANGELS... BUT, BUT HOW COULD YOU HAVE DONE SUCH A THING? I MEAN, LOOK, IT'S HAPPENED, THEY WERE ALL LYING ABOUT ALMOST DEAD, AND NOW THEY'LL ALL UP WANTING US TO FEED THEM. ALL RIGHT, ALL RIGHT, I DON'T KNOW WHAT TO SAY, YOU'VE TOTALLY BLOWN MY MIND, BUT... THANK YOU... AND THANK YOU - ANGELS?

YOU'RE WELCOME MISTER, WE'RE FINISHED NOW AND WE'RE GOING, YOU CAN TAKE CARE OF THEM ALL NOW, AND FIND THEM ALL GOOD HOMES. TELL THE PEOPLE WHO WANT THEM THAT THE ANGELS HEALED THEM ALL FOR YOU, THAT SHOULD MAKE PEOPLE WANT ONE OF THEM - AN ANGEL-HEALED DOG AND CAT... I wish I could have one.

TAKE ONE, TAKE AS MANY AS YOU LIKE, MATE, IT'S THE LEAST I COULD DO FOR YOU.

Na, but thank you Mister, my dad wouldn't let me keep it.

Come on Tommy-

We've got to go Mister, the angels want us to help someone else now, so we'll see you sometime... hey, can I come and help you look after all em dogs and cats? And I'd like to put those goldfish

in me pond if you think that's all right.

YOU LIKE CLEANING UP DOG SHIT ALL DAY?

Doesn't worry me Mister, I'll do anything. I like being with them.

IN THAT CASE, ANY TIME MATE, I'D LOVE THE HELP - ANY HELP, THE MORE THE BETTER. AND THE FISH ARE YOURS - ANYTIME!

Righteo then Mister, I'll see if me dad will let me come back. See ya!

Hey Sage, you didn't mind me doing all the talking, did you?

No Tommy, you were perfect, it's exactly what I wanted.

Oh good, I just couldn't help meself... SAGE LOOK, LOOK WHO'S COMING... HE MUST HAVE GOT AWAY... ALEX!... COME ON BOY... ALEX, YOU NAUGHTY BOY, YOU ESCAPED, GOOD ON YOU, BUT I'LL HAVE TO TAKE YOU BACK, YOU CAN'T COME HOME WITH ME, DAD WON'T LET ME KEEP YOU-

He'll be all right Tommy, let him come, you'll need a good friend when I'm gone, and I'll talk to your dad, I'm sure it will be okay.

ALL RIGHT! DO YOU HEAR THAT ALEX, SAGE SAYS YOU CAN COME HOME WITH ME, AND WE'RE GOING TO BE BEST FRIENDS, AND SHE'LL FIX IT WITH DAD - YIPPE ALEX! OH YOU'RE A BEAUTIFUL DOG, ISN'T HE A BEAUTY SAGE?

Yes Tommy, he is-

And he likes you too Sage; and look, he knows how to run along by my bike without any fuss - oh you're a good dog Alex, I love you Alex... but I love you more Sage.

I understand Tommy.

Gee Sage, all em animals you fixed, and the look on that man's face, he'll have a hell of a story to tell; what a laugh, we'll have to watch the News Sage, and see if it says anything. Can I stay at your place tonight?

Yes Tommy, we've got things we need to talk about.

Great Sage, and can I bring Alex?

Yes, I don't think Doug and Cath will mind.

You're coming to Sage's tonight Alex, we've got very important things to talk about, like who Sage's angels are going to fix next.

*

THERE IT IS, THAT'S THE PLACE SAGE AND ME WENT TO TODAY. LOOK, THERE'S THAT BLOKE STILL RUNNING AROUND NOT KNOWING WHAT TO DO; SEE ALEX, THAT'S WHERE WE GOT YOU FROM, YOU WERE AS GOOD AS GONE, BUT THE ANGELS FIXED YOU.

Gee Sage, they say all the people are flocking to take one the animals home, they all want a pet that was healed by an angel.

Yes, they won't have any left by tomorrow; but then they will start coming again, there's always more sick and unwanted pets.

LET'S HEAR WHAT THAT BLOKE SAYS TO THE NEWS WOMAN-

I DON'T KNOW WHO THEY WERE, A YOUNG WOMAN AND YOUNG MAN, THEY JUST APPEARED, LOOKING AROUND. I ASSUMED THEY'D COME TO OFFER US SOME HELP, AND BY GOD WE NEEDED IT, BUT LIKE SO MANY PEOPLE WANTING TO HELP, IT'S WITH A GOOD AND LOVING INTENTION, BUT THEY DON'T HAVE THE TRAINING, AND SO END UP MAKING THINGS EVEN WORSE FOR US. SO I SAID, NO, THANK YOU, BUT NO, WE DON'T NEED YOUR HELP... AND THEN LOOK WHAT HAPPENED. SEE FOR YOURSELVES, IT'S A MIRACLE, IT'S ALL TOO MUCH, I STILL CAN'T GET MY HEAD AROUND IT. THIS SORT OF THING YOU DREAM OF AND WISH FOR, BUT IT NEVER HAPPENS... AND NOW IT HAS! THEY JUST WALKED ABOUT, THE TWO OF THEM, AND ALL THE ANIMALS ROSE FROM THE DEAD; I MEAN SOME OF THEM WERE IN A VERY BAD WAY, AND THEY ALL JUST CAME BACK TO LIFE - IT WAS INCREDIBLE. WE JUST GATHERED THEM UP AND PUT THEM IN THEIR PENS, AND IT WAS ALL OVER IN A MATTER OF MINUTES, JUST THE TIME IT TOOK FOR THE TWO OF THEM TO WALK AROUND THE PLACE. THEN THEY WERE GONE, I DON'T EVEN KNOW WHO THEY WERE. THE BOYS NAME WAS TOMMY, I REMEMBER THAT, BUT I DON'T KNOW WHO SHE WAS. AND TOMMY SAID IT WAS HER ANGELS THAT DID THE HEALING - WONDROUS, THE BEST MOMENT OF MY LIFE! AND IF YOU ARE OUT THERE WATCHING THIS YOU TWO, THANK YOU SO MUCH, I WASN'T QUITE MYSELF AFTER WHAT YOU'D DONE, THANK YOU AGAIN... AND PLEASE THANK YOUR ANGELS FOR ME TOO!

Awe, he's a nice bloke, isn't he? And the best thing is, dad says I can go and help him out each weekend and sometimes after school; and dad's all right, isn't he Alex, he let me keep you old mate.

Wow Sage, how wonderful; yes, that would have been wonderful to see, amazing, just like that...

Yes Doug, it was. Sage just walked around and there was no light this time. It was all very quiet, very peaceful; and the dogs and cats all woke up and didn't bark or make any noise, they all just started following Sage around. It was so nice seeing them all looking so well and happy; and you are, aren't you Alex, no problems with you old mate.

*

Tommy, what you did today with that man was perfect, I want you to understand that. I don't need to say anything, you know what it's all about and what we do, so it's all right with me if you do most of the speaking, you just say whatever it is you want to say, is that all right with you?

Sure Sage, not worries.

I will of course say certain things, but as more and more people become involved, I will need you to sort of be like a shield for me, you can stand in front of me and tell them what you feel and answer their questions.

A shield, yeah, I like the idea of that Sage; yeah, I'll protect you.

It will be the angels who'll be protecting both of us, however you are free to say whatever you like.

Ok then Sage, I won't try and keep my mouth shut like mum and dad are always saying I should do.

No, go the other way and say whatever you feel.

All right, I will. And thank you Sage, I like how you like what I say, you never tell me off and tell me to shut up.

I love all you say Tommy, and you can't say anything wrong, so you've got nothing to worry about.

Gee, I like that sound of that, I can't say anything wrong - you hear that Alex, I can't say anything wrong, according to Sage. And do you also know Alex, Sage and me are soulmates, that's something very special, so Sage says. Can you have a dog soulmate Sage?

No Tommy, only with another person. We're different from the animals Tommy, they are really like undeveloped nature spirits; whilst we people are all about finding out the truth of ourselves through our relationships with each other and with the creatures, and all of nature can help us with that. And there's no such thing as reincarnation as so many people believe, people coming back to earth for another life, as another person or even as a creature - that's all nonsense Tommy.

Reincarnation... me dad says I'll be coming back as a big turd-

Don't listen to him Tommy, he's only trying to be funny.

I don't listen, but still it makes me feel bad when he says such things, even when everyone laughs.

I know Tommy, and it's not right, he shouldn't say such things to you like that or to anyone, but he can't help it Tommy, it was how his parents treated him. But you'll be able to do your Healing one day and fix up all that hurt-

Will the angels fix it in me?

Yes, as you fix it yourself. Doug and Cathy will explain it all to you when you're older, you'll see them on and off right they way through your life, it's all part of how it's meant to be.

So is everything planned for us Sage, you seem to know an awful lot about me and what's going to happen?

Yes it is Tommy, but only the angels know what's in store for us, and sometimes they are allowed to tell us.

What's going to happen to Alex then?

He's going to be with you until you are eighteen years old; and then whilst chasing a cat, he'll get run over by a car and die. But that will be all right Tommy, because by then you will need to be without him, free to do other things, he will have helped you with all he can. And you'll get other dogs throughout your life, all sorts of pets in fact, all at different times and for different reasons, they all coming into your life to help you experience what you'll need their help with.

So Alex is helping me?

Yes. Remember how I said the animals and creatures are sort of like mini nature spirits, well like the proper nature spirits, they are helping us too, so he is helping you. He loves you Tommy, and will stick by you, he will never tell you you're bad or that you should shut up; he too will love all

you say, and he'll always be ready to go with you on your excursions when you go exploring and doing things like that.

Looking for more Treasure?

Yes.

Great, I like the sound of that. Sage, you said you think I'm smart-

Yes. You're smart in your own way Tommy, maybe not smart at school, but that doesn't matter; you're much smarter in other ways than some of the people who are smart at school work.

It bores me, I'm never really interested, not like how I am with everything you talk about. Dad teases me saying that I'm as thick as brick, and as smart as a turnip, and that too makes me feel bad.

I know Tommy, and it's mean of him to use you that like, all so he can make out he's the smart one. Alex will help you to feel good about yourself. And so will I, from the other side. And as I said, when you are older you can work through all the issues to do with how your father and mother have treated you, and that will help you be more kind and caring, more loving to your own children.

I like the sound of that Sage.

Yes Tommy, you'll see, it will all work out for you; there will be some hard and difficult times for you, you'll feel hurt and unwanted - rejected; yet there will also be lots of good, fun and exciting times. I can't tell you exactly what they will be, I'm not allowed to influence or interfere with you any more than I already have, so I can't tell you too much.

You've told me so much as it is!

And I'll be telling you more before I have to go.

I don't like you saying that.

I have to keep reminding you Tommy, as it is helping you to cement all that's happening in you, in your mind, because you're going to need to remember a lot of it, so my talking about my death is keeping it all real. We don't want to pretend that it's not going to happen, only for it to suddenly happen, and the shock shocks all we've been together out of you, or back into the hidden depths of your mind.

I don't understand what you're saying Sage, you're way too smart for me now.

It's all right Tommy, it's just different things are happening to me than they are to you; but you'll catch up, there's plenty of time, and everything finds a balance in the end. And because you are my soulmate, then we will eventually be equal on all levels. Yet whilst we're to be apart, we need to do other things, so we'll form and grow and change differently.

Will we really come back together one day Sage?

Yes Tommy, but not until you've lived a full life on earth. We'll come back together when you die and come into spirit; and by then you'll be old, however you'll be ready. Lots of the memories of how we are now and what we've done, will come back to you, all to prepare you for our reunion; and your wife will have died long before you, and she will have met the person she is meant to be with in her new spirit life; and you are to stay behind on earth helping your children and their children to grow up and know all that you know; because by then Tommy, you will be very smart and you will know an incredible amount of things, and lots of things because I'll be helping you all through your life to know them. Things - thoughts, will come into your mind, and that will be me and your angels and God's Indwelling Spirit - God's voice in your mind, that will be telling you things Tommy, and all those thoughts will help you become very smart.

God already speaks to me Sage, I've not told anyone about that... I've been a bit embarrassed about it, but I know it's God's voice.

Our Mother and Father talk to me too Tommy, and there's nothing wrong with it, it's natural; and you can tell me, but it's probably best not to tell anyone else yet, we'll keep it a secret between us - how's that?

That's good Sage, I love our having our secrets together - and so many of them!

Try and get some sleep now Tommy, it's going to be a busy day tomorrow.

Goodnight Sage... goodnight Alex... You know Sage, I always wanted a black dog.

They are all in the family room Sage, so as I said, you just tell me what you want us to do.

Nothing for now Cath, just do what you and Doug need to do, and I'll tell you when I'm ready. Come on Tommy, let's go down to the family room and see everyone.

Hello Sage. Look, we've all heard what you did for Micky, Don and Ricky - he *is* changing, I saw him the other day, you've no idea what it's like, his parents are crying with joy every day, oh it's so exciting. However Sage, and as I have been elected to speak on behalf of all us here, we don't want you to feel that we are putting any pressure on you to help our children. We understand, thanks to Cathy, that it's not so much you, but your angel friends who have done what has happened, and that it's not up to you, it's all in God's hands - and we've all been secretly praying; however as I said, we don't want you to feel pressured at all, even if nothing were to happen, we are just happy to have you here with us - aren't we everyone?

YES!!!

Thank you Helen, and thank you all; that's all very nice of you not wanting to put any pressure on me, that does help, because it's such a big thing, and I was hoping that you'd all see it that way.

Well, we do Sage; and is there anything we can get you and Tommy to eat or drink... how about you Tommy, you're always hungry, here, have this sandwich.

No, thank you Helen, I don't want anything to eat, but you go ahead Tommy if you want to have some. No, I'm fasting today, just for a short time anyway, so I'll get something later.

Do you fast often Sage, you're a young growing girl, you don't want to deprive your body of too much nutrition.

No, only when I have work to do, it helps me to keep a clear mind.

I see, and what work might that be, are you going to be doing something later on today?

No Helen, I'm going to start my work here and now. I'll just call Cath and Doug, as they need to be here - Tommy, can you please go and get Cath and Doug-

Right away Sage.

All right, now that you're all here, of course you would all love me to heal your children, and I would too, and so that's what my angels and I are going to do. So could you please line them all up in a row, and Tommy and I will walk behind them... and if you can, all stand over there; and after we can all have a bit of a celebration. They are all going to be healed instantly by the angels, so prepare yourselves, you might see your children doing some very strange movements, but it's

all, all right.

Yeah, if they like go all rubbery, that's okay, because that's only what's happening to their bodies, but their spirits will be up there and protected by the angels, while they too watch what's happening - isn't that right Sage?

It is Tommy, so let's begin. Tommy will tell you what's going on.

Yes, I will tell you all that happens. Sage is going to put her hands on each one of em's head, and then the angels will blast masses of light, which we can't see, into them, and that will do the job - isn't that right Sage?

Yes-

SEE! Look at Minnie, she's going all rubbery now, but don't worry Joan and Roger, that's okay, that's what happened to Don, and it will only happen for a short time... see, her arms and legs are shaking, and her head looks like it's about to fall off; but it's okay, you don't have to worry about anything, Sage has it all under control - don't you Sage?

Yes Tommy.

ALRIGHT, NOW THAT'S MINNIE DONE, SHE'LL STAY ALSEEP FOR A WHILE, WHILE THE ANGELS GET HER SPIRIT BACK INTO HER BODY AND MAKE SURE EVERYTHING IS ALL RIGHT WITH HER. DON AND RICKY SLEPT FOR A WHILE TOO - AFTER THEY WAS FIXED... AND NOW THAT'S JOHN DONE... AND BECKY... AND SOPHIA..., MARY, DANNY, ONI, SAM... AND LAST ONE - MARGE. Now you can sit quietly until they all wake up. If you feel like thanking the angels for what they've just done, this is a good time to do it - oh yeah, and you might want to thank God, too. God's the big one in it all, of course, it's all happening because God wants it to. I'll just go and get Alex, Sage, I know he'd like to be here too, is that all right with you?

Yes Tommy, that will be good...

Alex, you can sniff and lick them, but they are all asleep having being fully fixed up... look Sage, Alex is trying to get them to pat him, he's putting his head under Minnie's hand... and now she's waking up! Hey, Alex knows how to wake them up, they are all waking up... good boy Alex!

Thank you Sage, thank you so much; yes Sage, and you too Tommy, thank you both, it's too much; yes, too much, too overwhelming, how can we repay you; what a wonderful gift to us all; it's more than a miracle, it's many miracles, and it all happening so effortlessly - we're speechless, we don't know what to say; we have our darling children back, look at my Minnie-

Hey mum, can we get a neat dog like Alex?

Yes darling, whatever you want; yes, yes, yes, we'll get an Alex-dog for you.

You can get one from the lost dogs home, that's where I got him, Sage healed em all, all the dogs and cats that were suffering from that chemical spill...

Ah, that was you Sage; yes, we heard it was Tommy, and we thought it must have been you. It's all so much, the wonder of it, we can't stop crying, it's too much, thank you again Sage, we've got our boy back, our lovely little boy, and look at him, he's a normal boy; oh Sage, what can we say; and thank you God, and the angels, and...

Come on Tommy, get Alex and let's go to Big Rock, I'm hungry now.

*

They were all crying so much Sage, they could hardly speak.

I know Tommy, so many nice tears for once.

You now Sage, dad says it's bad for us to eat fish and chips all the time.

What would he know what's good or bad.

Yeah, I'll tell him you said that Sage.

You better not Tommy, you might make him angry with you again.

Yeah righteo, and besides, I love having fish and chips with you Sage, and it's the only time I have them, and we don't have them *that* much... So those children you fixed today, they will be all right for the rest of their lives, will they?

Yes and no, Tommy. They will now be normal children able to go to school and do all the usual things, but they still have within them all the wrongness that they we're conceived into; and so as adults, the usual things will happen to them - some of them will live a long life, others will die from disease, Minnie will be the only one who looks to alternative things and will stay in touch with Cath and Doug and begin her Healing. She really is the main reason why the Healings were done, because it's important for enough people to start their True Healing, all so humanity will begin to help itself in the right way. I'm only stirring things up Tommy, putting on something of a show - it will be people like Minnie who'll do the really hard work of healing themselves through their feelings.

You mean you'll have the whole world crying-

Yes Tommy, something like that, rivers of tears, we've all got so many tears in us, so many deep down-

But you wouldn't Sage - why would you have tears in you?

I'm just like everyone else Tommy, I'm full of hurt, mum and dad leaving me in the accident; and then even before that, how they treated me. It wasn't that good with them, although they weren't as bad as some; but still I'm not right, you're not right, no one is right, we've all got so many things wrong with us.

Yeah, I know what you mean... you know, sometimes I feel like I'm becoming like how Ricky and Don and the others were, I sort of can't get my words out, or they don't come out right, like I'm not right either, I don't work right, like how my dad says about me.

It's nothing for you to worry about Tommy, it's just part of what you're going through, and I think we've all got Micky, Don, Ricky and Minnie and the others within us; we, for whatever reason, just didn't turn out like them, but they are no different to us, really. They are expressing what's really deep down within us, and it's only because we seem normal compared to them, that we don't see them in ourselves.

So you mean Sage, that I could've have been like one of them poor retarded children-

Yes Tommy, I think we all could have; and in some ways we are all more like them than we care to admit. It's what's been done to us, right through the womb, and then our childhoods, and you and I are still in our childhood, we're still forming wrongly-

Even with all the help of the angels?

Yes Tommy, they are only doing superficial work, making physical or outer changes. However the deeper essence of what's going on in the person, the reasons why they have the pain, feel unloved and rejected, and feel so unwanted, that caused those children to become retarded, that's what the angels can't fix, and that's why we all have to work to heal ourselves.

But their parents loved them, they are all so happy with what you done; you make it sound like their parents don't love them, and that's what made them become retarded.

On the deepest levels of truth Tommy, that is the truth, not that many people will want to face it; but on the more superficial levels, yes, their parents love them, and love them even more now that they are healed. But still they won't unconditionally love them, giving them what they truly need, because their parents can't, no one can in our world, we're all living in unloving states, and

we can't do anything about that, other than do our True Healing like Cath and Doug are doing, by looking to their feelings for their truth. That's the only way humanity will really fix itself, and heal all the repressed deepest pain that causes such problems as being retarded, or not even retarded, just being normal, and just having a normal life with all its problems.

I don't understand what you're saying Sage, I'm not smart enough yet, but one day I might get there, if as you say, you help me when you're in spirit. Hey Sage, how about telling me the answers of the tests we do - you could tell me in my mind all the right answers.

But that would be cheating Tommy.

Oh, yeah, but who'd know, no one would ever know, and then I could become a genius! And what would dad say about that!

No Tommy, you are to be yourself, that's what I love about you, your sincerity-

Agh don't say those big words Sage, you know I don't know then.

I like you just the way you are Tommy, you don't need to change yourself one bit.

I'm so scared Cath, scared of what might happen, to Sage, to ourselves, our whole lives ruined; you know, how you read of people getting eaten by the media-monster, that we might have people banging on our door day and night wanting to be healed, demanding that Sage help them, all the sick and dying, all the retarded, shit Cath, nearly everyone has something that is wrong with them and they'd like to have fixed.

I'm so scared that people will come and demand of me that I do something; and it's got nothing to do with me, I can't do anything, I'm not a healer, I don't even know where Sage is half the time these days. And you know how she won't take her phone with her, as she hates all that social media, she just likes living on a whim; which is all right, and why not, but she's only thirteen for God's sake.

What are you really scared of the most Doug?

That something bad will happen to her - to us, to you and me, the twins; yeah, I don't know, I don't really know what I'm so scared off, but I am. I feel like my whole being is wracked with fear, I'm trembling all over with it, as if the horde is going to descend and rip us all apart because they will be so angry not getting what they want.

It's as if, out of the blue, even like they are coming from that direction - the East, god knows why the East, but they will come from other there, and they will rampage through our place destroying everything, ourselves included, on the way. Sort of like the horrendous stories I remember reading about what happened during the war; how one side, the Germans, would rampage one way against the Russians, and then when the Russians got the upper hand, they raped and pillaged their way back. All those terrible things they did to the women, young girls and old women, it didn't matter, all these animal-like men standing round raping them one after another, it all being so horrendous; that's how I feel it will be, they'll do all sorts of horrible torturous things to you Cath, cut your babies out, just kill me, but subject you to all sorts of indecencies... I don't know, it's way over the top, but that's how scared I feel.

Do you think all those sorts of things that you've picked up from books and television and wherever else, have gone into you, into some sort of base or deeper fear caused in you by your parents; and it's actually not all this outer stuff, stuff that's highly unlikely to happen, but all the buried repressed fear, that is really terrifying you?

Yeah, you might be right about that. I can feel deeper fear; yes, scared of mum and dad at times, scared of things when I was with them; scared, just scared: scared all the time I think. I think I've got endless fear in me, and maybe it's what you said, like I'm projecting it onto what those people in the war must have felt, and all the pain they suffered. Christ, we humans are an unloving lot, we've done so much horror to each other. Do you ever wish it would just end, that someone like Sage would come and just heal us all; god I've wished that for as long as I can remember; but I can see now that even if she did do that, what really would it do, all these people would be healed and happy about that, but then so what, just keep going with their wrongness, being able to now do even bigger things making it even worse, because they are healed and no longer hamstrung by

some disease, pain, retardation or something. I mean, I can understand now what Sage means, by saying it's just window dressing, the healing she is doing, it's only removing the surface pain for a moment, but all the deeper levels we're suppressing and keeping repressed, they are still there. And how deep do those levels of pain go - we don't know, but they might go very deep; and how is humanity going to be able to bring all that to light? Shit Cath, that's going to take centuries of hard work, with a little progress here and there, as people like us try and do our Healing. And then hopefully, with the little we gain, we will pass that onto our children and not so unlovingly influence them; and then they might do a bit and pass that onto their children; god, it's going to take a long time.

We don't know Doug; but yes, I too wonder just how many people are going to want to keep attending to their feelings looking for the truth of them. Will any of those people Sage healed the other day do it; will any of their family members want to do it, they still don't even know it can be done. All that's changed in their lives is a huge burden has been lifted from them, but they just carry on, already I could see how they were treating their healed child just like their other children, so causing them more problems. God, I can even envisage that some of the healed children might end up begging Sage to reverse the healing, to make them be back how they were, all because they don't like actually being normal, getting all the usual abuse a normal child gets.

So I don't know about any of it either Doug, and really, I don't even want to think about it, it's too much. I'm tending to feel that I just want to pay attention to myself, to you and the twins, and that's all, and that I don't care about the rest of the world. I'm even feeling like stopping with the clinic, I think I'd rather even just go back to doing regular nursing, if I have to work at all. I don't think I want to have to shoulder the burden of such difficulties anymore, it might have even been a blessing for me that Sage has taken all my patients away.

Yes, have a holiday anyway Cath, you don't have to keep going with it - do you?

No, I've asked Carol to step in and take over, she's very competent, and has been looking for an opportunity to do things her own way; and so she is more than happy to start taking the new people. And it won't be long before I'll be off work anyway, having these two; so maybe I'll organise with her to take it over completely. Just the thought of it makes me feel happier, freer, lighter, you just don't know what you've got yourself into, how deeply you're in it, until you're suddenly free of it. But I wouldn't have been ready to give up, but now I can see that I will. We can sell my house if we need the money, and I've got quite a bit stashed away, so we don't have to do anything for a time.

Yeah, and I'll go back to work, I'll have to do something; and if you're not going to be at the clinic, then that will give me the incentive to do something else and for myself. And I'm sorry, but I don't think I could just stay at home being with you and the kids, I don't think I'm up for that, it will be too much.

It might be good for your Healing Doug, have you thought about it along those lines?

Yes, but we're going to need income coming in at some point, so maybe for a time; it would be good to see them grow and change when they are so young, and you'll need the help... but you never know... anyway, I'm open to whatever.

So do you still feel scared?

No, not as much, not now that we're thinking about the future and making some plans; no, I think some part of it is not knowing what's going to happen, not having any plans, nothing to work towards - I need to have some sort of goal or aim, something I can work towards.

And possibly you're meant to learn how to live without any plans - in the moment of your feelings, so to speak.

Possibly, I don't know, maybe you're right, my needing to have plans is my needing to have something to hold onto so I don't feel as scared. Shit Cath, all this is so new to me, even to admit that I am scared, I've never told anyone that; a bloke is not meant to be scared, or at least not show it. That's not part of the world I grew up in, and yet I'm beginning to see that dad and mum were scared. They pretended they knew it all, and being an adult, and just having more understanding about the everyday things of life, more than a child, means you can pretend you know a lot; but really, they were hanging on by the skin of their teeth - I can see that more clearly now.

I think we all are Doug, I think everyone's the same, because it can all fall apart at any moment. Your health can suddenly go, you get sick, and then very sick, and it doesn't matter how much wealth or security in material things you've got - we're all vulnerable; and as we all live untrue to ourselves, and so out of touch with our true feelings, so we are all riding blind, we don't have a clue.

Did Sage say when she'd be home?

Any time now, I should think. Why?

I was going to tell you when I told her, but some bloke, Mike, rang, the guy who runs that news show we like; and he was somehow connected to Minnie, and he wants to talk with Sage about what she did.

When did he call?

He called at the clinic when you were out, and I forgot about it, it just came into my mind, I can't seem to hold onto anything more for more than five minutes, everything that's happening is too much - I don't know what I'm doing half the time. In some ways Cath, I wish none of it had

started, but then as soon as I go down that path, I come to meeting you, and that wouldn't have happened if it weren't for Sage. But I just feel like we're on the tip of the iceberg, and we're about to be inundated with people, many of whom really I don't want to have anything to do with. I want a quiet life with you Cath, I don't want all the media getting involved, I don't want the spotlight to be shone on us, even if we're just on the periphery.

No, nether to do I Doug-

Good, well at least were in agreement there. Anyway, this Mike wants Sage to call him, or for me to ask her if she'd agree to an interview with him about what she does.

You'll have to tell her and see what she says.

Yes.

Here she is now... Hi Sage, has Tommy gone home?

Yes, he's needed by his mum, she's been to the hospital today having her small operation.

Sage, a guy called Mike phoned wanting to interview you about what you did at the clinic. He's got that news show on television, and he said he knows Minnie, he's connected with her family, so understands what she was like before, and can't believe what you did, and wants to talk to you about it. I think he might even want you to go on his news program.

Yes, that's all right Doug, I was expecting him to call. He's the one and the only one I'm going to talk with from the media. So it will be good to meet him and see what he says.

Okay then, how about I ask him to come over here in the next couple of days, would that be all right, then we can all meet him?

Yes, fine. Tuesday evening next week would be good, if that's all right with you both, and with him.

All right, I'll ask him.

*

Hello Mike, please come in, Sage is here waiting for you.

Sorry I'm a bit late.

That's okay, you're not putting us out... I'm Doug, and this is Cath - and Sage.

Hello, and I guess you are wondering why I've come; and well, I'll get straight to the point. Sage, I understand what you did at the clinic with those children was, not only extraordinary, but out of this world, literally, if I'm correct, in that you work with the angels - is that right?

Yes. They did the healing of the children through me.

Wow, amazing, I had to hear it from your own lips - so it's true then?

Yes Mike, it's true, Cath and I were there, we've seen it, and we've talked at length with Sage, you don't have to worry about that, as hard as it might be to accept.

Ok, and when I think of angels, probably because of my Catholic upbringing, I think of religion - are you religious Sage?

No, not in that sense, not as in adhering to the tenets of any man-made religion, however I am deeply religious, in that I am religiously spiritual.

Ahha... So you're spiritual, but not religious as such... so you believe in God?

Yes, I love my Heavenly Mother and Father, and I long to Them for Their Divine Love; and They tell the angels what They want done, and the angels do it through me. I am needed as the physical part of the link between the angels and people, so that's what I do.

I see, wow, and so you're not connected with any religion?

No, and not with any spiritual system of belief, either. It's all my own doing. I have revealed a little of what humanity really needs to do to heal itself, with all my miraculous healing only being band-aid work. And if you want to know more about the True Healing that people can do through their own feelings, then you'd have to ask Doug and Cath about it, as they are doing it and understand some parts of it better than I do.

Real healing - what's this real healing then?

It's learning how to live by looking to your feelings as the way, how to keep honouring every feeling, and particularly all your bad ones; and then as you accept and express them, whilst longing for the truth of why you have them, so the truth comes, and you are working to heal yourself of all the wrongness that's been put into you through your childhood. That's as I understand it from Sage, and the spirits and angels that work with her.

I see Cathy - so do you speak with them too?

No, not directly, only Sage does that; however we can easily speak with them through her.

Can you give me a demonstration of that Sage?

No, because I'm not putting on a show for anyone. I'm doing the work of my Heavenly Parents, and They only want me to speak about such things and in such a way with Doug and Cathy.

I see. All right, so that's all fascinating. I don't know what to make of it, I don't even know if I understand half of it, yet I just felt I had to come and meet you in person Sage. Are you going to do more of these miraculous healings?

Yes Mike, and I want you to record them.

You do! In what way?

Sunday week, I want you to meet Tommy and I at the Children's Hospital; and I want you to bring a small camera crew, and to have it all arranged with the hospital, and to film the angels healing all the children.

Seriously? You're going to heal *all* the children at the Children's Hospital?

Yes.

That's a lot, there's a lot of children there, there must be hundreds-

Yes.

Jesus!

Yes. And I want you Mike to be the one I go to in the media, only you, I don't want to have lots of people trying to interview me or taking my picture, only you and the small camera crew to film what I do. And we can talk a little there on film, and then that will be all, until I need you again, do you understand?

Yes, yes Sage, I do; and it will be pleasure. Right then, so I will organise everything with the hospital, and you understand Sunday is family day, so there will be lots of people there-

Yes, that's the idea. Their parents will be able to take all the children home with them.

So you are that confident, are you?

Yes, it's going to happen Mike. I will be there with Tommy at 2pm, and then we'll walk through

all the hospital, and the angels will heal all the children.

Oh shit Sage, do you know what you are saying... and what I film-

You can do whatever you like with it Mike. It's yours, and if there is any remuneration that comes of it, please give that to Cath and Doug, I don't want it, nor will I need it.

Yes, yes, shit there will be, this could be huge!

Yes, bigger than you have any idea of Mike, but I need you to organise everything because I don't want to know about anything. I am just going to arrive with Tommy around 2pm, and you can start filming, and I will see if I want to say anything to you as we go, and possibly at the end; then Tommy and I will leave, and that is all, I don't want anyone doing anything else.

Very well young lady, you seem to have it all planned.

It's not me Mike, it's the angels, it's how they want it.

Very well then - who am I to argue! Alright Sage, I will have it all organised for you, you can just show up, and we'll take it from there. I'll bring two camera guys and a sound man, and one other guy who'll do whatever else we need doing - how's that? And if there's anything else you want - Doug, you can ring me?

Yeah, I'll do that.

Ok then, Sunday week Sage; very well, I will see you there. I think I need to go away and digest all of this, god, the whole hospital, it will be mayhem... alright, I can't wait - wow - to see you work Sage, I...

*

Now Tommy, we've got a big day today.

Yes Sage I know, you're going to fix all the sick children at the hospital.

Yes. And so Tommy, it's time to go; and so, do you know how to get there, which train we can catch?

Sure Sage, I went there by train when Andy was crook, it will take time to get there, we have to change trains.

That's all right, I like riding on trains.

Yeah, me too. So do we need anything? And as usual, you know, I've got no money.

Of course you don't Tommy, and as usual-

Yep! It's right here, gee I love how you do that Sage, I love putting my hand in my pocket and feeling it in there, all those neatly folded notes... so let's see how much we got this time... \$200 bucks, all right, so we're going to be giving some away are we, as we don't need that much? The return train tickets, and then can we have fish and chips on the Big Rock after-

Of course Tommy, it's a must, it gives me time to reflect, and come down out of the Light.

Great, that's the part I love the most Sage, just the two of us being together there on the Rock looking out to sea... and knowing we're sitting on my stash of course-

Of course Tommy.

So with all these children you're going to fix - how are we going to do that?

Where going to met a man called Mike, he's the one from the News show, and he is going to have some people with him who'll be able to film what happens, so you're going to on TV tonight Tommy.

Grouse, me on the television again, gee I hope mum and dad will be watching, they'll get a big surprise.

A lot of people are going to be very surprised Tommy, the whole world in fact, because Mike will be sending what we do out over all the other News stations in the world.

God Almighty! I'll be famous!

Yes, so it's going to be very big. And lots of people will be talking about it, and lots of people won't know what to make of it, and many people will think it's all fake and just a stunt to get media attention for Mike, or something like that; and other people will really believe, and will be stunned that a young girl can do such things, and that as I can't obviously do such things myself, they will believe it was really the angels that did it. And that will have huge ramifications through the world, it will be like a wave of new awareness will be sent off like a big ripple or a bomb blast for some people; and people will be talking about it for a very long time to come. But it will only be the beginning Tommy, we'll be doing other things like that for a little while after it, and then it will finish, as it will time for me to go. And as I've told you Tommy, when we get there, you just be yourself, say whatever you feel to say, and stay with me, right by my side, that's the most important part-

Righteo Sage, I won't leave your side.

Good, because there might come a time when we might need to do some fast running to get away; so when we get there, check out the area as we're walking up, so you know which way we can run so as to get back to the station.

No problem Sage, you can leave all that to me. Too bad we had to leave Alex at home.

He'd only get in the way Tommy, and they'd not let him the hospital.

Oh, I guess not.

And there's going to be a lot of people there Tommy, it's family day, so all the families of all the sick children are going to be there; but that will be good in fact, because there will be so much going on and so much commotion, we'll hardly be noticed.

Oh no Sage, he comes one of those vagrants again.

It's all right Tommy, he only wants money, so give him fifty dollars when he comes up.

Here you go mate...

Good lord, thank *you* mate, fifty bucks, and just like that, I didn't even have to ask, thank you both, and God bless you; fifty, just like that, well I'll be...

That was easy Sage! The trains don't run as much on Sunday you know Sage, so we might have to wait a while.

No Tommy, we'll not have to wait - see.

Great Sage, I love how you always have everything so well planned!

It's the perfection of the angels Tommy, and as they are organising everything, so everything works like clockwork.

Them angels are truly amazing Sage, I can't wait until I can see one myself.

You will once you come into spirit Tommy, and after you've done your Healing, then you'll have many of them as best friends, and you will be able to live and work with them. There will be angels everywhere, and everything we do will involve them. But only for us when we have embraced longing for and receiving the Divine Love, and have done our true Healing; and not

before, because if we live in spirit as so many spirits do, being like how they were here on earth, still not wanting to live true to their feelings and looking to their feelings for the truth of themselves, then there will be no angels, only deluded spirits believing all they do is right, when it's all wrong, and still going against themselves.

Really?

Oh yes Tommy, there are unimaginable wonders in the higher spirit worlds waiting for us, they've shown me pictures and taken me on trips - you can't begin to imagine just how incredible it all is.

Wow!

Yes, wow is right Tommy.

*

Okay Tommy, the hospital is up that way - right?

Yes Sage, at the end of this road.

Alright, then check out how we can get back to the station if we can't come down this main road.

That's easy Sage, we can go another way, me dad took me and it goes to another station on the same line we came on, it's a bit longer to get too, but if we need another way, I can get us there.

Good... and I can see Mike standing out the front of the hospital, that's him with the suit on...

*

Hello Sage, and you must be Tommy-

That's right, I'm Tommy, Sage's soulmate.

I see... Well, we've got it all ready... I think. What I mean is, the hospitals staff are a little nervous about what you might do, and sceptical, thinking you won't do anything. I've done my best to impress upon them that they should at least give you a go, and if they don't, then I will broadcast that they weren't prepared to allow the children under their care to be healed by angels, and you can imagine how well that'd go down. So I've done as you said Sage, kept it all hush, hush with my colleagues, and we've got the two camera men, they'll follow you around with the sound man, and Joe will just see to it that everything goes sweet. I'll introduce you to him, he used to be a cop, so he's good in crowds if things get a bit hectic... so, how does that sound, is there anything else I can do for you?

No Mike, we may as well go in and start.

Okay young lady and young man, follow me.

Hold my hand Tommy, and make sure you don't let go; I want to know you are there all the time, you're my connection with this world - okay?

Sure Sage, I like holding your hand.

Good. Now give me a kiss, too, and we'll say a quick prayer asking God for Their Divine Love and to help us do what They want done; and that we don't know, and They do; and the angels are ready, they are all about, there's so many of Tommy, more than I've ever seen; and they say each child has their guardian angels ready for us, so when we get to them, they will affect the healing, and whatever else needs to be done-

What's that nice smell Sage - flowers, it smells like me dad's roses, gee it's strong, I love that smell Sage, it reminds me of you - you smell like that all the time.

It's the angels Tommy making the smell, it's much nicer than the hospital smell.

Now then Sage, this is Joe-

G'day you two, we going to have some fun and games Mike reckons, I've got to see this to believe it, and I'll be right with, you need anything, anyone get in your way, and you let uncle Joe deal with them, all right?

Yes Joe, it's a pleasure to meet you, and that will be good, we might need a little help dealing with the crowd when everyone starts to get excited.

Too easy, you can trust me; and we've not told anyone - the sick kids or their parents - about anything, so it will come as a surprise to them, just as it will to all of us.

Good, thank you. So can you take us to the first room of sick children, and we'll start there.

Sure Sage. How it works is the real sick ones are right down the back; and by the way, there's a back door down there; and then there are sick kids with all sort of problems and in all states of recovering on the seven floors, there's a lot of kids in there, about a thousand of them in all. So Mike reckons you just want to walk about the wards, so what's say we start on the ground floor and work our way up, and then we can come back down the elevator at the back and take care of the real sick ones at the end, and you can go out the backdoor once it's all over. The really sick section is sectioned off from the rest of the hospital, so just in case you raise a real hullaballoo,

you can have some peace and quite down the back, and I think Mike would like to interview you then, if that's all right with you.

We'll see what happens Joe, but your plan sounds good, let's do that. Tommy and I will follow you.

Were you a cop Joe?

Yeah Tommy, twenty-two years and I've seen about all you can see, but I ain't seen no miracle healing done by the angels. I'm a Christian, and it's going to test my faith I reckon, but no worries, because God sure works in mysterious ways, that much I've seen in my life.

So here we are Sage, as you can see, Mike is all set up ready to go, he'll try and keep out of your way as much as he can, he'll be talking into his microphone recording what's going on, and we'll even go live to air at one point; but if he or the camera guys get in your way, you just tell me, all right?

Alright Joe.

And we've also got another bloke who's going ahead of us just warning the families that a camera crew will be coming through, and if anyone would rather not be filmed, to pull their curtains and we won't interfere. But it's a good distraction for most of the kids, and they are all eagerly waiting for the film crew, however they don't have an idea about what's being filmed, they don't understand that it's going to be themselves!

Keep holding my hand Tommy, and don't leave my side.

I won't Sage, I'll be right with you.

Okay then, let's go. You can start filming Mike, the angels are all here, and they are eager to begin.

Fantastic Sage, you do your thing, and we'll follow and record what happens.

Come on Tommy... hello...

MUM, LOOK WHAT'S HAPPENED TO ME!

WHAT?

ME CUT, IT'S ALL GONE, IT'S DISAPPEARED - WHERE DID ALL MY STITCHES GO!?

RING FOR THE NURSE! NURSE LOOK, LOOK AT HIS STOMACH, NOT A MARK,

NOT A SCAR, NOTHING - WHAT'S HAPPENED... AND LOOK, IT'S THE SAME FOR HER OVER THERE! LOOK AT HER LEG, IT'S AS GOOD AS NEW... IT'S A MIRACLE! LOOK, LOOK WHAT'S HAPPENING TO ALL THE CHILDREN, THEY ARE ALL GETTING BETTER, LOOK!

MUM, LOOK AT ME, MY ARMS NOT BROKEN ANYMORE... AND MY LEGS ALL FIXED, I CAN WALK! DAD LOOK, I CAN RUN AND JUMP, IT'S NOT SORE ANYMORE... HEY YOU, GIRL, DID YOU FIX MY LEG, YOU TOUCHED IT, AND MADE IT ALL BETTER, HEY!

IT'S TRUE NURSE, IT'S HAPPENING JUST AS MIKE SAID, WE DON'T NEED TO DO ANYTHING, JUST WATCH MIRACLES HAPPENING AT EVERY BED, THEY ARE ALL REALLY BEING HEALED, SHIT IT'S AMAZING, PRAISE BE TO GOD!

How you doing Sage, Tommy, you two need a break or anything? God, I can't believe my eyes, it's all so easy, you just walk along and touch a head or an arm and it's done, the kid leaps out of bed, and we're onto the next one... okay we'll go through here to the next ward, these are all the cancer patients... you okay Mike, getting all you want?

Getting it Joe, this is a once in a life time, this is incredible, shit, and she just keeps walking and look, look at them all Joe, I can't stop crying, it's magnificent; God-sent, she's an angel herself Joe, look at her, so graceful, so giving, she's so focused on each patient, then when they respond, she's onto the next.

These children in here Tommy will all need a different type of healing, it's something that the angels do with the light that stops the cancer. And then they put in other lights into the children's aura to stop the cancer coming back, because these healings are permanent, the children won't get sick again once we go, they might get sick from other illnesses in their life, all caused by how they've been treated since conception, but that will be for them then to deal with, and I'll be long gone.

Some of the ones who are asleep look like they're dead, and all the tubes sticking into them, and all those bandages, god, I hope I don't end up here.

No Tommy, nothing like this is for you, and we'll fix them all here today, but there will be more coming into the hospital tomorrow, and the next day and the next, however I can't worry about that now.

HEY, THERE SHE IS!

HOLD ON NOW, KEEP BACK, YOU CAN'T COME UP, SHE'S STILL GOT WORK TO DO-

BUT WE WANT TO SAY THANK YOU TO HER, SHE FIXED ME LEG, AND I DON'T HAVE TO STAY IN HERE ANYMORE, I CAN GO HOME - WHO IS SHE ANYWAY, WHAT'S HER NAME?

IT'S SAGE, AND SHE'S WORKING WITH HER HEALING ANGELS TO HEAL ALL THE CHILDREN IN THE HOSPITAL, AND WHEN SHE'S DONE, SHE'LL COME BACK AND YOU CAN THANK HER THEN, SO PLEASE, GO BACK AND ENJOY BEING HEALED.

ALL RIGHT, BUT MAKE SURE SHE COMES BACK, WE WANT TO THANK HER.

SHE'S GOING TO BE SOME TIME, WE'VE GOT TO UP STAIRS STILL, SO YOU MIGHT WANT TO GO.

NA, NO WAY, I WANT TO WAIT... ME TOO - LOOK, THAT SICK KID IS GETTING UP, HE'S PULLING ALL THE TUBES OUT OF HIMSELF, LOOK HE MUST BE CURED! NURSE IN HERE, LOOK HE'S PULLING ALL THE TUBES OUT OF HIMSELF!

AND HEY, LOOK AT THAT, LOOK WHAT CAME INTO MY HAND, A PINK CRYSTAL... AND ME TOO, I'VE GOT A PURPLE ONE... YES, ALL THE GIRLS GET PINK, THE BOYS ARE GETTING PURPLE... LOOK, THEY ARE JUST MAGICALLY APPEARING OUT OF THIN AIR INTO OUR HANDS - WOW EVERYONE, THEY'RE HEALING CRYSTALS!

Right then Sage, you made quick work of that lot, and that's a nice touch with those rose quartz and amethyst crystal wands... I wouldn't mind one myself, and one for the Mrs... you still getting this Mike, we're going upstairs now; more of the same Sage...

Look in your pocket Joe, a little surprise.

Neat! I love you Sage, and all your angels - thank you God, the Mrs is going to love this wand; you know, she collects crystals, and now a special one blessed by the angels.

You see up ahead Tommy, there's a Great Angel, I've not see one as big as that before... oh, there's two of them, they are right up to the roof, even higher than it, and they are standing guard to this floor. They are telling me they are ready for my visit, so we can go in Tommy, are you all right?

No worries Sage, just enjoying seeing what you're doing; and look what I found in my pocket - it's so lovely, thank you Sage - thank you angels.

Good, this whole floor is going to be easy, I'm not even going right in, the Great Angels are saying they will take care of it all, it's all been arranged. I've thanked them... we're not going in further Joe, we can go up to the next floor, the Great Angels have taken care of everyone on this level - see, all the kids are getting up out of their beds.

Shit, she's right, pardon my swearing love, but you're right, and you only stepped inside the door, well that was easy... okay Mike, you still with us, we're going up the to the next floor, infectious diseases... I don't know that I want to follow you in there Sage-

You've got nothing to be worried about Joe, no one will catch anything, the angels are healing everyone.

Yeah, all right love, in you go, and here I come, I'll still be holding my breath - my leap of faith!

The disease only comes Joe when the soul needs it to give the person the experiences they need, which is really all the feelings they need; and all these children need it because they will one day use the experience when they do their true Feeling Healing; to understand how unloving their parents were to them, as they wouldn't get sick, they'd be no disease, if we were all truly loving. It's all for their future Joe, but as they have all had what they currently need from their disease, so we can heal them.

If you say so love, I don't know about that unloving parent part, might not want to say that too loud around here; but shit, look at that, half this poor lot look like they've been living very rough on the streets; but look at the colour flooding back into their faces, and you're just walking down the aisle, you don't need to touch them Sage? And it's raining rose petals, and that delicious smell of roses again, well I'll be - wow Sage, this is some show, look how the petals are raining down out of thin air, nice, that sure is a nice touch - all pretty and pink. It's all so healing...

The angels have increased the Light, I'm able to cope with the intensity more, now that we're into the swing of things, so to speak; so I don't need to actually physically connect with each child.

Increased the light have they, well blow me over with a feather. How about you Tommy, how are you, you're very quite though all this?

I'm all right Joe, making sure I keep holding Sage's hand, it's very hot, almost too hot to hold, she's so hot I'm sweating.

Yeah I can see that, she's steaming... you don't need a glass of water or anything Sage?

No thanks Joe, when we've finished, let's go up to the higher floors...

Same deal Mike, straight through we go, these mighty or great angels, whoever they are, obviously

know the sore, as they are doing some mighty healings by the sore, the poor old doctors and nurses can't keep up. It kind of puts them out of a job.

There will be more sick children coming to the hospital tomorrow Joe, so they won't lose their jobs.

Yeah I guess so, pity that; and what about you Sage, you coming back next week when it's full again?

No, I can't Joe, it's a one off here, it's all what God wants for the time being.

And I won't ask you why God wants it like that-

I wouldn't be able to tell you, even if you did ask, as They've not told me.

They?

Yes Joe, God is our Father *and* Mother of Heaven.

Well, I'll be. If you say so young lady. Lucky I'm something of a flexible-in-my-beliefs Christian. Okay, now Sage, look at that sea of happy little vegamites all leaping out of bed, I bet the nurses are on the phone madly calling up their parents, the ones who haven't come in. And we lost Mike on the way, you whizzed through those upper floors not even needing to go in. So here's the lift, we'll go down, and you can wrap it with the critical ones.

Okay Joe, and thank you for all you've done.

It's my pleasure little lady, I would have missed it for quids. You were awesome, wait until I tell the wife, she won't believe me, but at least Mike's got it, so if you don't mind, I'll just call her, and tell her to record the News.

No Joe, there's not many in here, and as you said, it's quiet, it's a relief, and the angels are already underway, these children will all sleep for a while once their healing is done, then they'll wake up and be fine.

Righteo, I'll tell the nurse and I'll get you a drink, and be right back.

So that's it Tommy, we've finished now, you can let go of my hand.

I don't think I can Sage, I think it's broken, your grip was so tight at times, it's needs to be healed... ah, there you go, I wasn't holding it too hard, was I Sage?

No Tommy, it was just perfect. Now let's sit down here for a moment-

There's the way out Sage, if you wanted to split now, we could, they are all too busy, what do you say, shall we make a run for it?

Yes, good idea Tommy, let's go...

*

Oh Tommy, thank you so much for all your close attention this afternoon, you were just perfect, and it was so nice to feel you close to me all the time. I don't feel as lonely when I'm with you, as I've told you before, it's such a nice feeling just being together, the two of us.

It is Sage, especially sitting here on Big Rock and eating our chips - I love that the most. And what a day Sage, you fixed so many children, I lost count. What do you think is happening back there at the hospital, do you think they are still looking for us?

No Tommy, Joe would have figured it out, he used to be a cop, and I'm sure he'd have known we'd split, which was probably why he suggested we end it down the back, and told us about the exit, and even went off to make his phone call and get us a drink.

Yeah, I liked him, he was great.

Yes, we'll be seeing him again. I will need his help and support soon enough.

Are we going back to the hospital? No, I've got another plan.

Sage, that was outstandingly wonderful what you did at the hospital last Sunday, I'm still trying to get over the amazingness of it, we all are - even Joe was touched. And it's made a huge impact on the whole world, we've been inundated with requests, people want to see who they are calling the Angel-Girl, they want to hear you talk, here what you have to say; and as would be expected, you've been invited to just about every country and hospital in the world. So what do you want to do? I am not going to pressure you into anything, but if you are going to keep going, you're going to need to be managed properly, it will be too much for the likes of poor old Joe. And I would like to interview you, here at home or in the studio, somewhere where I can ask you some of the questions people are asking.

Alright Mike, I'll agree to an interview here at home, whenever you like, however please don't tell people where I live.

No, of course not, we'll be as discrete and we can. However people are still going to want to know; and Doug and Cathy, I'm sorry to have to tell you this, but you might even have to consider moving, if things get more heated. You both might have to 'disappear' as such, as would you Sage, Tommy might be all right as he is.

It's not going to last for very long Mike.

What do you mean Sage?

I'm not going to live very long. I'll soon be dying and going into spirit, I have work that needs to be done over there.

And the angels can't heal you?

Oh no, there's nothing wrong with me, it's the angels who are taking me away with them.

I see, Jeez, so you're telling me this is all going to come to an end very soon.

Yes.

I see... right then, so we're to make the most of you whilst you're still here?

Yes. And I'll tell you what I have in mind.

Please do.

I want Joe, and his wife, if she agrees to come, to drive Tommy and I up the coast, and along the way we will do healings and other things; and we will organise to meet up with you at certain places so you can film all that goes on. Then Joe will drive us back here, and that will nearly be

the end, as it will by then soon be time for me to go.

And after we get back, and just before I go, I want you to organised to have as many special needs children and adults as you can in the studio, and Tommy and I will come and heal them so you can have it all on film.

And with an audience?

Yes.

All right Sage, that can be organised; so when will to start your trip?

The week after next we will leave with Joe and his wife if she agrees to come, we four will 'disappear' up the coast for a holiday before I go. And I'll tell you later about when I want to do the studio healing, it depending on how long we'll be away, however I'll give you plenty of time to get everyone ready.

All right then, I'll call him as soon as I leave here, and get onto organising things for your trip and the studio when you get back; and you don't mind how big the studio is, as in say a couple of hundred special needs people-

No, all so long as Joe can easily take care of Tommy and I, and get us away when the time comes.

Very well Sage, I'll see what I can do.

Also Doug and Cath, here are numbers of people you might like to contact. You've a lot of money coming your way, and you'll need an agent and lawyers, and other people to do stuff for you to see you get what rightfully would come to Sage. And as she is a minor, you are custodians of her affairs; and anyway, they are all good trustworthy people, and they will take care of everything, you can sort it all out with them.

Thank you Mike, we really appreciate what you're doing.

Look, it's my pleasure, and the least I can do. This is huge, I'm going to milk it for all it's worth in a good way, and now knowing that it's soon to end; well, in a way that makes it all the more special. We'll be sorry to see you go Sage, but I guess that's none of my business how it's going to happen, but will you tell us when it's time?

You'll know Mike, because that's going to be the greatest healing of all.

I see... uhha... all right, I'll have to think about that one... God, I couldn't be around you too much Sage, you'd do my head in. Right then, I'll go now and get onto Joe, and if he's sweet, then we'll set up the studio thing. And you're sure about giving me and the Station exclusivity?

Yes Mike, I'm sure about that.

It's really pissing off everyone else in the industry, I can tell you - I'm laughing, so it will be my pleasure Sage. I'll get back to soon.

Bye Mike.

*

Yes, it's all fixed Doug, you can tell Sage, Joe has agreed, as has his wife, she's looking forward to a trip away; and I've teed-up the studio, which is in fact three basketball courts side by side, so I hope that won't be too big. And I'll be around on Friday night to interview Sage, jut a couple of guys sneaking in after dark, and she can confirm it all then.

Great Mike, and thank you for those people, they've organised everything for Cathy and myself, it all being very easy. We feel much better about it all now.

Yes, they'll look after you, and help you with whatever you want; there might be some follow through, you know, after all this over, but we can talk about that then.

*

So Sage, Angel-Girl, how do you like your new name?

It's alright - and it is what I am.

Yes, I suppose so. Sage, people want you to tell them how it all began?

My parents and younger brother died in a car accident when I was four, and my uncle looked after me because I was left crippled and in a very bad way. Then shortly after I became a woman, you know, after I got my period, Esmerelda, my Healing Angel, came to Doug and I when we were on the beach. It was a lovely evening, and my angel Esmerelda came from the sea riding on her seahorse, Zoel. She took my hand and said she wanted to go for a walk, as she had things to tell Doug and I; and I stood up, and I could walk! And it all started from there.

So when you say, Esmerelda came to you - could you both see her?

No, only I could, she came in spirit, as angels are not allowed to be seen here on earth; things have to change considerably, for them to be allowed to be seen.

Really, like we people have to change?

Yes, because we don't understand that we are really meant to live true to our feelings, which means we are meant to stop denying our feelings, and instead embrace and express them all, and want to know the truth they are trying to show us about ourselves.

Is this your spiritual philosophy Sage?

Yes, because it's the truth.

I see. And so once Esmerelda came to you on the beach and healed you - what happened then?

She and the Sisters, who are the band of spirits that help me, started to teach me about angels, and the healing they wanted me to do. And so slowly with my friend, Tommy, the angels started to do some healings, using me as their helper on earth.

So how does it happen Sage - when you do a healing?

I am told by my angels what they want to do, and how it's going to be done. Like the other day in the hospital, they told me to go there as they had everything organised. And then when Tommy and I got there, they told me what to do, to put my hand on this person, or just walk along through the ward; and then they do what they do, and there is healing-light everywhere, all going on in spirit; so we people can't see it, but I can see it, because I can see into the angels world and into spirit too, into the world of spirits, the two worlds being different, although angels can come into the spirits worlds if need be, and that happens higher up. And there is light everywhere, all sorts of light, thin rods of light, thick ones, spirals of light, waterfalls of light, dancing lights of all colours, but mostly white; and light filling the room, light going into the sick children, light going into their families, and everyone else who was there - it was so bright at times I couldn't even see the children, there was just so much light.

And what do you feel in all that light?

I feel calm, centred, at-one with God, happy, and like I'm going a good thing.

So you are just needed to be there, none of this would happen without you?

That's right. I'm one of the Sisters of Light, and they have helped me to come into My Light, because now is the time of great change that's coming to the world, and people are ready to look for a New Way, because the old ways only cause so much pain. And so I am the forerunner, if you like, and there will in time be more like me, but not for a while as other things need to happen first - other things have to happen in the world and to people. I am helping to create an awareness, and it all has to be focused around the angels, because they are going to be the ones who end up helping humanity the most.

And you're not religious Sage, in that you don't belong to any religion or spiritual group?

No, I'm just me. God has told me that They, my Heavenly Mother and Father, want me to heal people, as I am doing with the help of the angels; and so that's how it is, it's nothing more than that for me. However there is a whole spiritual philosophy based around why I have come, however other people are going to teach that, now that I have revealed it to them.

And that's to do with our feeling acceptance, and using, as you said, our feelings to look for the truth of ourselves.

Yes.

So Sage, it all seems to us too incredible to comprehend - what you are doing; and had we not recorded it on film, no one would have believed you.

Only the people present when the angels heal them.

Yes, that's right; however now the whole world has seen what you can do... How do you feel about that?

It is as it's meant to be, it's exactly as the angels and God wants it. So I feel good about it.

Is there anything you'd like to say to people who might be watching this and listening to you?

Yes. I would like to say that God does love us all very much, just as we've been lead to believe, however there are many things we still don't understand. For example: if God does truly love us, then why is there so much suffering? And the answer to that is very involved, however a new way to live, one that focuses more on feelings and uncovering the truth of oneself through them, has now been made available to us: a way for those people who seriously want to know the answers to such difficult questions, and a way for people who want to live true to themselves; and a way for each person to truly heal themselves of all the pain and suffering they are in. Soon there will be information available so people can think about it and see if it appeals to them. As I said, it's: The Beginning; the beginning of a New Way of life, and one that is lived through ones feelings, and no longer one that is lived with the mind in control. However, it is up to each individual to want to live true to their feelings, and when they do, then the angels will be there to help them.

That is all I want to say. I do not understand it all that well, I am only here to do the healing with the angels, and won't be alive for much longer, for my angels will soon be coming to take me into the spirit worlds with them, as there are many spirits there who I will also need to heal. However the Sisters and Esmerelda have explained all I've said in greater detail; and as I said, soon, and once I am gone, such material will be made available for those people who are truly interested in learning how to live true to their feelings.

Thank you everyone for listening to me.

Thank you Angel-Girl.

Hello again Sage and Tommy, this is my wife Veronica, and she has been following your good-works, and has been looking forward to meeting you.

I have Joey. And for God's sake, stop yacking on and get in the car, let's go, we don't want to be hanging round here all day, we've got a lot of miles to cover, isn't that so, Sage?

Yes Veronica.

Look love, call me Vony, it's much easier; you too Tommy - you're quite sitting there, what do you have to say for yourself young man, you all involved in this angel stuff too, are you?

Yes, Sage and me have been together all the way along.

Well, good for you. And now, tell me what we're doing together, Joey was a bit vague about things; and by the way, I can't tell you how much I adore my angel-crystal Joey gave me from the hospital, it's my favourite, that's for sure; it's got something extra special about it, I don't know quite what it is, but it's some sort of added light; so thank you and your angels my dear, it gives me such a nice comforting feeling when I hold it.

So he said we're taking you both on a little trip up the coast, and that you are going to be healing some people and stuff, and I am going to stay in grand hotels, paid for at great expense by the Station - and it's about bloody time they showed how much they value my Joey, he's always doing all sorts of extra things for them, just this, driving a couple of kids half way round the world.

We're only going up North Vony, to Sydney, it's not that far, even I know that.

Oh you do, do you Tommy, and how might you know that?

I've got a map, Sage said I should buy it and look at it, so I know where we are going.

Sounds good to me, so where are we going Tommy, what's the first stop?

Latrobe Valley and then Sale, they've got a hospital there, we're going to meet Mike at it; and you can come with us Vony and watch Sage and her angels in action.

Or you can stay at the hotel, love.

I'll come, I'm not going to miss out on this, not in your life. I want so see the lass in action, and then once I've seen it, I might retire to the Good Life.

*

Well, oh my dear God, that was the most wondrous thing I've ever seen young lady, how on earth did you do it? All those sick people, young and old, and all in between; the looks on their faces, in their eyes, priceless, especially when half of them recognised who you were. Oh Joey, I feel like I've died and gone to heaven myself, that was the best thing ever, wasn't it?

It sure was love, too much for words-

Yes, I've not a *good* cry like that for a long time... don't think I've ever had a good cry, always it's a bad cry, but crying when it's good, well that's just good. And now I've seen it with my own eyes, I am a believer, you are truly a little wonder pet; and you too Tommy, how you helped Sage, you were a true Master of Ceremonies. You two are a good team, that's for sure, and even that dog of yours Tommy, well he doesn't bother anyone does he, he's just happy to lie there contentedly on your lap, he's so well behaved.

It's the angels Vony, they take care of him, they put him to sleep when we have to leave him alone - they are always looking after us all, so Sage says. And I reckon it's true.

So we're going to work our way up the coast like that, are we?

Yes.

Well, I'll be, it's been worth putting up with Joey for all these years just to have this experience with you both... and Alex too, of course.

Thank you love, I thought you'd enjoy it once you got into the swing of it.

*

They are now at Narooma, Cath. Mike's doing a great job documenting their travels, and as would be expected, there are more and more people gathering outside the medical centres and hospitals, and it's all getting too much. So they've announced they are going to vary their course, they can't heal everyone, and so it's going to be God's will, as to where they turn up.

*

This is my old stamping ground Sage, when I was a copper, the Southern side of Sydney, Vony and I used to live not far from here. So where are we going today, now that we've got Vony settled in a nice seaside pad of luxury, she could so do with a bit of pampering, she's never asked for much during our time together, and I've tried to give her all I could, but I think I came up a bit lacking in the money department, I was never able to get much of a promotion thing happening, more just a foot-slogger, was my lot. Mind you, I ain't complaining, and this job now with the Station, is not too hard, and occasionally has it's perks, like this with you; and this time at

least, Vony can enjoy something of a perk too, looking at her surrounded by all those sweet smelling bubbles... god, I hope she doesn't get used to it!

We're going to do something a bit different today Joey, we all need a change, and there is something I want to find.

You mean Sage, we're going on a Treasure Hunt with Joey and Alex?

Yes Tommy, what do you say to that?

YES! FAN-BLOODY-TASTIC, what are we going to find today? You'll love this Joey, Sage is the best when it comes to treasure hunts.

It's a surprise for you both: Joey will love the irony of it; and you Tommy will relish it, as it's to do with your favourite treasure you like to hunt for.

GOLD!

That reminds me of a case I was once on, about ten years back I think it would have been. There was this Crim, and he was good, and I mean, bloody good, you even had to admire the little shit-

What was he same Joey?

Albert, Tommy, Little Al, we called him in the force. Anyway, he had done so many jobs, breaking and entering, houses and jewellery stores where his speciality, and when we finally caught him, he confessed to all the crimes he'd committed, he had them all written down in a ledger book, dates, times, even how he'd done it.

Anyway, we went to his house and he had all these stashes everywhere; he wanted to come clean, as he said he'd reckon it would help the judge go lenient on him if he owned up to everything. So there we were, going through the list ticking off everything, as we were pulling up floor boards and finding hidden holes in the wall and the like - stuff was stashed everywhere; and then at the end of it, there was one thing we couldn't find, and it had us stumped, as we'd searched every inch of the place, even dug up the back yard; but nope, and he wasn't spilling the beans on this one last job he'd pulled - we never found it. He said it was for his old age retirement, and we all knew he probably had other stashes hidden away anyway, a wily old character like him; but this last one we really wanted to find because it was just gold nuggets, lots of them, all different sizes that he'd somehow nicked from the museum. But as I said, we never found them, because Little Al was having the last laugh.

Where is he now Joey, still in prison?

No, he's dead, I heard he passed over a couple of years ago, so we'll never know where he hid

those nuggets.

Gee, I'd like to find them - eh Sage?

You never know your luck Tommy!

Oh Sage, you're the greatest; so, what do we need for this treasure hunt?

A couple of strong bags you can both carry. And a crow bar-

I've got one in the back Sage, it's not very long, a tyre lever, and there's plenty of strong carry bags too, will that do?

Perfect. And that's all. So now Joey, do you remember where that house was of Little Al's?

Hmm... yeah... now let me think... I think I can remember, it was this way... but there'd be new people living in it by now, it was such a dump, it would have been demolished, and I reckon anything we'd have missed, would have been found, even some of the cops would have gone back looking for stuff on their off time, I even thought about having a snoop around myself... Yeah, it should be down this road... ahhhh, yep, and well look at that, it's still there all boarded up, so they've not pulled it down yet, well you just don't know, they are probably still going through it, he had a lot of stuff stashed away in there. I'll park round the back, there's a lane, more private, and we can have a look around - see if we can get in.

Hey I like this, snooping around with an ex-copper - what if the real police come?

Then I'll have some serious explaining to do Tommy. I hope I'll know them, we might get off with a warning.

Nothing's going to happen, the angels have put the smoke screen out, no one will know of us coming here and what we're going to do; and as there is no way the neighbours will know with those high brick walls on either side, we'll be all right.

If you say so Sage, I'm getting a little nervous.

Not up for the breaking and entering stuff, eh Tommy?

What would happen if we got caught?

Nothing to you two, you'd just get a good telling off, you're minors; but Vony would not be speaking to me for some time with the fine I'd more than likely cop. But I don't mind, I'm game if you reckon we'll be all right Sage... so how do we get in... let's go and see if we can get you in

Tommy, through a gap in the fence... I could pull one of these palings out, and you can slither though, and then come and open the back gate... and if you can't do that, then you can hunt for the treasure yourself... here... I reckon I can leave this one open enough... can you squeeze through Tommy, I think it will hold and not slap down hard on your bum... good lad, what about the gate, has it been bolted on the inside?

Na, it's got twine around it, I can undo it... hold on, nearly there... yeah, here we go, I can pull the bolt...

Good, well that easy, fellow trespassers; now what Sage, as you can see, the place has been well and truly picked over.

Hey look, a pond, and with nice goldies in it, they are nearly as big as mine at home.

Yes, the pond was here back then too, it had just been made, it didn't have any fish in it then, someone must have put them in; but it was filled with water, and you could see the bottom - it was all freshly painted, a nice job, with those big rocks there around the back for extra affect, and to build the pond up higher like that... it's at a nice height to sit round the edges; and we sat on it a lot back then, trying to work out where next to dig. We dug up the whole of the back yard, went over with metal detectors, the whole lot; and we found a lot, but never them nuggets.

Little Al hid them in the pond.

IN THE POND! How!? What do you mean Sage, there was nothing in the pond, you could see, plain as day, it was so clean and clear, it looked like it didn't even have water in it. I remember that clearly, we spoke often about it, a few of the guys joked that they'd commission Little Al when he got out of the slammer to build them a pond, as it's so nice.

It's in there Joey, he's telling me.

Who is?

Little Al, he's laughing at you Joey; he says he always liked you, you were good to him, never gave him any trouble; all the cons liked you Joey, as you always treated them with respect.

And you're talking to Little Al, just like that?

She can see him too, Joey?

You can Sage?

Oh yes, easily, he's there standing on the side of the pond over near where the rocks begin.

Little Al, well I'll be... say G'day to him for me, will you Sage?

Yes, he says he wants you to have his gold Joey. He likes the irony of it all.

He always was a good one for a laugh, weren't you Little Al.

He's laughing now.

Alright then, so it's a mystery - where's this gold then; how did you hide it in the pond, we never saw anything?

He says you've got to get in, then go over to the edge where the rocks meet the side, and feel down the side with your fingers, there's lots of slime there now, but that won't hurt you... and you should be able to feel a rough bit. When you feel that, push it in hard with all your strength, and you should start to feel it give, and then the rest will be obvious.

All right Little Al, I'll give it a crack... you won't mind Sage if I take my shoes and pants off, my shirt should still cover everything... so you reckon it's over here somewhere, what, like a secret entrance?

Yes, Joey, he's saying it goes back into the rocks... can you feel the rough part?

Hang on love, I'm clearing away some of the slime... and pass the leaver will you please Tommy... ah, that's better, now I've scrapped it off... yeah, well I'll be, there is a rough patch, here it is, and he reckons to push it in... okay, I'll give it a try... shit, I just felt it give a little... hang on... there we go, it's coming up, YESSSSS, well blow me down, look Tommy, look down in there at all the water rushing in, and I just saw a bag or sack of some sort. Gee, what a cunning little bugger Al was, you thought this up Al, it's very neat, no wonder we never saw it-

He saw it in a book he once read, and thought it would be a good stash spot, and he'd just finished the pond - he'd always wanted to have fish.

Who put the fish in? Give me a hand here Tommy, its heavy, and I don't want to do my back in.

Some of the police who came, they said it was too good a pond not to have fish.

Yeah, that makes sense... All alright Tommy, you got a hold?

Yep.

All right, LIFT... fuck me, it's heavy, all the water in it is not helping, hold it against the side

Tommy so all the water can drain back into the pond, then we can close this secret trapdoor back up into place, and no one will know we've been here. Gee, you did such a good job of it Al, no one would ever have known... and what a laugh, how many times had we sat on the bloody nuggets, and obviously no one ever thought to run the metal detectors over it. All right Tommy, I've got it, you get that big bag under it, and we'll sort it out later... Right, so that's done it then, I can't wait until we have a look inside, but we'd better not do that now, we'd better be gone as soon as we can... You re-tie the gate Tommy, and I'll leave the board for you... great, well done team, we'll put in the boot for the time being, a bit of water ain't going to hurt it, let it drain anyway, and then smuggle it into the hotel later... let's go. Fuck me, it's stressful being a thief, how did old Al do it for so many years...

*

Hi Vony, we've got a little surprise for you... we'll open it in the bathtub Tommy as there will still be water in it... here goes, hold onto your britches Vony...

WELL, WOULD YOU LOOK AT THAT!

LOOK AT ALL EM GOLD NUGGETS - THEY ARE BEAUTIFUL.

They sure are Tommy, they sure are, never seen such a beautiful sight before in my life.

And whose are they Joey, we'd you get them?

They're Sages, she guided us to find them today; it was an old case, we'd never been able to find the stash of this artful thief, but he's dead, and now these are Sages, because they are nuggets of gold and no one could track them or know where they came from.

Where did the thief steal them from?

The museum.

But wouldn't it have records of them?

No, we checked into all that at the time, they didn't, just a general item - gold nuggets, was recorded, not even how many. We reckoned at the time it was an inside job, but we couldn't finger anyone; then Little Al the thief said he'd pinched them, when we caught him.

He's saying Joey-

Little Al, what, he's here with us now, too?

Yes, he sat on the bonnet of the car as we drove back to the hotel. He wants to tell you about the job, then he says he's going, and he hopes we all have a good life with the dough. It was as you suspected, an inside job, he went in with the curator of the museum, that was how he did a lot of his jobs, there was always someone willing to make some extra money; but he'd got caught before he had time to even up with the curator, and he's long gone now too, so it's all yours, he says... and with that, he is bidding us all fair well; he's laughing Joey, saying you own him one-

Too right, I do. Thank you Little Al, see you when my times comes.

He says he'll have a spirit-ale with you, and you can discuss old times, he's got a few other stories he'd like to tell you.

I'll be there.

Typical Joey, lining up a drink in his afterlife, what will he think of next! But look at these little and big beauties, what a beautiful collection, I've never seen anything as gorgeous, they must be worth a fortune.

Yeah, especially with the price of gold these days; and so they say, likely to go up further. So Sage, what shall we do with them for you?

I want Tommy to pick out a small amount of them, ones that look good to him; and then the rest are for you and Vony - for all your help. I don't want them, I've no need of money.

Really Sage, for Vony and I? You want us to have them-

Yes, you've been good to us, and so it will help you remember us. Is that all right with you Tommy, you take what you want, and leave the rest for Joey and Vony.

I only want this big one, is that all right with you Joey?

No, it's not! Joey and I would not want all that and for you to only get that big one; here Joey, help Tommy pick a few more, they are too good to sell anyway, they are beautiful. I want to keep them in memory of what you've done for us Sage, maybe when we go Joey, we can leave them to someone-

What about the museum Vony! And they'd be a good retirement fund... of sorts.

Hmm, well I'd have to think about that... more like some animal shelter, or something like that.

Yeah all right, we'd have to cash them in though, and give them the money, because people these days, you couldn't trust them, not with these sorts of beauties - these are cash in hand, no

questions asked.

Not these days or any days Joey; and yes, that's a good point, give them to a good cause only to have them stolen all over again. All right Joey, we can discuss it later. Thank you my dear, thank you so much...

Right then Sage, this is your night, there's quite a crowd in there, and everything is ready to go.

Good Mike, let's get on with it, it will be the last personal healing I will do... Tommy, will you take my hand again? And give me a kiss-

Yes Sage.

We'll, walk around everyone, and then we'll ask for quite, and the angels can work on them... Ah that's good Tommy, at least you won't have to tell everyone to be quiet, you could hear a pin drop - so Let's Begin...

It's Over. Alright Joey, if you can get us out of here now.

Certainly Sage, I've got it all planned, we'll go over toward Mike, he understands, he'll make out like he's going to give you an interview, and we'll slip out the back door, Vony's already outside with the car...

Hop in Sage and Tommy... you in Joey... Oh Sage, that was wonderful, incredible, what a strange sight, all those twisting bodies, it was creepy, eerie, yet everyone was captivated, so well behaved. I don't think anyone moved a muscle until it was over... it was too much, the light was intense, I could even feel it, we were all pinned to our seats. It was fantastic, I had goose bumps up and down my spine, all my hairs were standing up on end, everyone was crying, oh it was very moving, so very special, I feel privileged to have been part of it, what you did for all those people. And you were so cool Sage, wonderful, you looked so pretty - radiant, so full of light yourself, everyone could see that. That was the best night of my life, I will never forget it. Thank you Joey, and thank you Sage and Tommy. We will never forget you Sage, you've touched us all, you've made us all feel like we've been personally blessed by an angel... and an angel who is your dear self. We all love you Sage.

Sage, I don't want you to go.

I know Tommy.

Can't you take me with you, I don't want to stay here, it's not going to be any fun without you.

You'll have Alex, he needs you, and I won't be far away Tommy - I've told you about all of that.

But Sage, it's not fair, I love you with all my heart, and you're going, and what am I going to do without you?

I know it's difficult Tommy, but I've got to go, it's not long now, soon Esmerelda will be coming from me. I can hear her, out there, the sun is starting to go down, and I am tired. My time has run its course Tommy, and as much as I will miss you too, it's not as you think, you'll see, it won't be too bad for you at all; and I'll be able to talk to you in your mind, and we'll still go on adventures and treasure hunts, you'll see.

I hope so Sage.

Now Tommy, I want you to do me one last favour; take this phone of Doug's, and when I go into the sleep of death, please call him to come and get me - my body, he's expecting the call.

Yes all right, but what are you going to do?

Esmerelda will be here very soon, she's coming closer, just as she first came when she healed me. She's riding in over those waves on Zoel... and when she gets here, I will lie down with my head in your lap; and then when it's time to go, I will go to sleep, and that will be the end of it.

All right Sage, I'll try not to cry, but it's very hard, I don't want you to leave me.

I know Tommy, but it's what God wants... and here she is now arriving on the beach, she's walking up the sand to Big Rock...

Hello Sage... it's nearly time, are you ready to come?

Yes Esmerelda, I'm just saying goodbye to Tommy.

Would you like me to wait for you down by the water?

Yes please, I won't be long.

She's here now Tommy, and I have to go. I'm going to lie on your lap like we do with each other, and you can stroke my hair, that always made me feel happy.

Ok Sage.

There now Tommy, and I want you to know that with my going, I am going to also leave the world with one last present, a gift from the Healing Angels and the Sisters of Light. As you know, the whole world knows today is the day of my death, and thankfully they have honoured my wishes and left us alone on our Big Rock.

So what are you going to do Sage, what's your parting gift to us all?

A wave of angelic healing light is going to flow around the world, and everyone will be touched but it. All the sick will be healed; all the crippled, retarded and mentally disabled - everyone who is not right, will be made right, although for some people it will take up to two years for their healing to be completed giving those people involved time to adjust; and all the depressed and miserable and sick at heart and in their spirit, will feel happier, all their pain will be taken away; so for one day, everyone's aches and pains will be removed, yet only for one day. And all the people who are healed, will remain so, they will not get again that which has afflicted them. However should anyone become sick the next day - and even people who I have healed with my parting wave of light, should they the next day get sick with some other problem, then I am sorry, but I can't attend to them, they will remain as they are.

And everyone will know that I have been, and that I have gone. They will have been given a glimpse of what is to come, a moment in time when everyone could share in the feeling of God's love for them, all coming to them through God's helping angels...

Tommy, the pull is stronger now, Esmerelda says it's time for me to come to her, so I must go Tommy... I'm... I'm slipping away Tommy... goodbye my love... I will come to you in your dreams Tommy; I will speak to you in your thoughts... I will forever be in your heart... God blesses you Tommy, have a good life, and I will see you at end of it... Goodbye now Tommy, kiss me one last time... And take Zarina and keep her safe.

Goodbye Sage, my wonderful Sage, goodbye my true love, and I will see you in Heaven.

Yes, Tommy, I'm very tired now, I must go to sleep so that I can wake up again... I'll be walking down the beach Tommy, I get to ride with Esmerelda on Zoel's back... it's time now Tommy... I'm going into the Light, it's calling me... bye my love... by Tomm....y...

It has Begun! I feel your light Sage; I feel it in me, I feel it going out to the whole world... We love you Sage... And I love you the most... goodbye Sage, I will never forget you... thank you for all you did for all those people Sage... goodbye my love Sage, goodbye...

*

She's gone, hasn't she Tommy? We felt her going.

Yes, she walked down the beach with Esmerelda... can you come and get us please, Doug..

I'll be there as soon as I can Tommy.

Doug's coming for your body Sage... he won't be long... I miss you already... Can you hear that man playing his guitar and singing his angel song of love? Sage, I think he's singing it to you: "I am as an angel, an angel of Light..." ...do you want to have one last fish and chips on our Big Rock? Bye Sage... goodbye my angel-love...



Sage and the Healing Angels of Light - question and answer.

So James, why did you write Sage?

Because I wanted to put all I understand the angels to be, and the two different types of healing, into a simple story based on a young woman. And a woman with certain 'powers', because I think it will be women of the future with such powers to do both sorts of healing that will greatly help people.

How did the inspiration to write Sage come about?

I met the granddaughter of a woman I work with one evening on the beach. Her name was Sage and she was four. And she was dressed in her 'angel' clothes. Initially I tried to write some children's stories for Little Miss Sage who is also four, with the intention of sending them to grandma and Sage, however having written three stories I got cold feet about sending them. Some months later Sage was revived and she'd grown up to be twelve, nearly thirteen, and so the story began.

And you included the Little Miss Sage stories in Sage.

Yes, I suddenly felt like I wanted to include them, and so in they went, there and then, perfect, with the story as I was writing it, taking their inclusion in its stride.

And what do you mean by that?

In deciding to write Sage, I also decided that I wasn't going to try and think about the story. I didn't want to have reams of story floating around in my mind as has happened in the past. Sections of a story will come into my mind, and I love how it's all structured and what's taking place, but then I can't copy it from my mind onto the page, it all changes, and some of the times leaving me feeling that what I've written is not as good as what was in my head. So I didn't want to go through that sort of let-down again, so decided this time I'd just write it with nothing of the story worked out. And I did. I sat down and it just started, and I wrote it, and even the names of some of the main characters like Esmerelda and Ursula I didn't like so much to begin with and tried to change; but no, they had to stay as they are. And then once I'd written it, there was a couple of things about angels I realised had been left out, such as their being able to 'fly' us through the air, should that need to happen. And I knew where I wanted to put that in, so went back and

it wrote itself in, as if it was all meant to be there. I love that about the book, like the angels themselves, it all just flowed perfectly well for me. I can hardly even remember writing it, it just seemed to have happened of its own accord, only I do remember some days as I'd written so much I could hardly press the right keys anymore.

So it didn't take long to write?

No, about ten days. That's how I write all my novels. I don't actually like writing them much, I don't like having the 'pushing' feeling of them being in my head and wanting to come out. I suppose they are all really written by spirits who are channelling them through to me, but I don't know about that. I've asked the spirits I speak with however they've not let on. I've asked the angels I also speak with and they say it's a bit of both, them, the spirits, my Indwelling Spirit, and my own soul and mind. So I don't understand the process at all. It's much more straightforward when I write with the spirits or angels as in them conveying 'messages' to me. Then I can feel it's them impressing what they want to say on my mind. But with my novels, I don't sit down and say, okay, who up there wants me to earth their book for them?

But you said you have a 'pushing' feeling-

Yes, like it's in me wanting to come out. It's a stress of sorts, and uncomfortable at times, and I have to not tune into it for then I start writing it in my mind, and that's much easier than slogging away at the computer. It's always a better story and fantasy in my mind, and I can restart it endless times over, or endlessly change any part of it. But when I come to actually write it, it is usually just the one way and I can't alter it.

So do you think there will be a Sage, and even Sages, on earth one day?

I can't honestly say. I'd love there to be, and I can't see why not, particularly if people do their Feeling-Healing or Soul-Healing the with the Divine Love. And as at some time, when humanity has fully healed itself of the Rebellion and Default, and when people are living on the world expressing a Celestial level of truth, then such people should also be having close personal relationships with their angels, just like the Celestial spirits do. However that's a long time in the future; so in the meantime, there might be examples of people living and working closely with the angels like Sage in the book. And if there are, I'd love to see them work. So I'll be watching from spirit, as surely if they are to come, it will after my time. I have to be content for now with my own imagination.

And so like all one writes, can you say there is a lot of yourself in Sage?

Yes. At times I relate more to Tommy than Sage. Sage I think is the female version of my fantasy self who would love to work with the Healing Angels. However the realities of doing such work, some of which I've touched on in the story, make me think that I'm glad it's only a fantasy. And poor Tommy, not having such 'power' and being left behind, although he will have a good and fulfilling life, is still more closer to home as to how I feel about myself. That I was left behind in a sense by my mother who had a touch of Second Sight, but as she never included me in it, let alone including me lovingly in her life, always keeping me at arms length, I feel deprived and let down and not the special one.

And so if people do their real Healing, as you talk about in the book, healing themselves by living true to their feelings, then such people might be able to also work more closely with their angels.

Yes. And like all things, some people will feel very drawn to them, other's not so; however everyone will understand that the angels are wanting to be closer to us when we're longing for the truth through our feelings, and when we're longing to God for Their Divine Love, and when we're striving to live true to ourselves and to stop living against love, truth and the very angels themselves. So as people do their Healing, I think their angels will come closer and it will show in their lives and how they relate to themselves and the world about them.